THE NEW TESTAMENT OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST,

Newly tranſlated out of the original Greek: and with the former tranſlations diligently compared and reviſed, by his Majeſties ſpeciall command.

¶ Appointed to be read in churches.

¶ Printed by the printers to the *Univerſitie* of CAMBRIDGE.
Ann. Dom. 1637.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO S. MATTHEW.

CHAP. I.

1 The genealogie of Christ from Abraham to Joseph. 18 He was conceived by the holy Ghost, and born of the virgin Mary, when she was espoused to Joseph. 19 The angel satisfieth the misdeeming thoughts of Joseph, and interpreteth the names of Christ.

*Luke 3.23.

The book of the * generation of Jesus Christ, the sonne of David, the sonne of Abraham.

*Gen.21.3. *Gen.25.26. *Gen.29.35.

2 * Abraham begat Isaac, and * Isaac begat Jacob, and * Jacob begat Judas and his brethren.

*Gen.38.27. *Ruth 4.18. 1.Chro. 2.5.

3 And * Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar, and * Phares begat Esrom, and Esrom begat Aram.

4 And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon.

5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab, and Booz begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.

*1.Sam.16.1 and 17.12. *2.Sam.12. 24. *1.Chro.3.10

6 And * Jesse begat David the king, and * David the king begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Urias.

7 And * Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

8 And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat Joram, and Joram begat Ozias.

9 And Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achaz, and Achaz begat Ezekias.

*2.Kings 20. 21. 1.Chro.3.13. ‖ Some reade, Josias begat Jakim, and Jakim begat Jechonias. *1. Chro.3. 16,17.

10 And * Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Josias.

11 And ‖ Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, * Jechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob.

16 And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteen generations: and from David untill the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, are fourteen generations.

18 ¶ Now the * birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph (before they came together) she was found with childe of the holy Ghost.

*Luke

19 Then Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou sonne of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

21 * And she shall bring forth a sonne, and thou shalt call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sinnes.

*Luke

22 (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

23 * Behold, a virgin shall be with childe, and shall bring forth a sonne, and ‖ they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with us)

* Isa.7.1 ‖ Or, his n shall be called.

24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

25 And knew her not, till she had brought forth her first-born sonne; and he called his name Jesus.

CHAP. II.

1 The wise men out of the east, are directed to Christ by a starre. 11 They worship him, and offer their presents. 14 Joseph fleeth into Egypt, with Jesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the children. 20 Himself dieth. 23 Christ is brought back again into Galilee to Nazareth.

Now when * Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the dayes of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,

*Luke 2.6,

2 Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his starre in the east, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chief priests and Scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born.

5 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet;

6 * And thou Bethlehem in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governour that shall ‖ rule my people Israel.

* Mic. 5.2. John 7.42. ‖ Or, feed.

7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise

734

wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the starre appeared.

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go, and search diligently for the young childe, and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo, the starre which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young childe was.

10 When they saw the starre, they rejoyced with exceeding great joy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house, they saw the young childe with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they || presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe.

|| Or, offered.

12 And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own countrey another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young childe and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young childe to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young childe and his mother by night, & departed into Egypt:

15 And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, * Out of Egypt have I called my sonne.

* Hos. 11. 1.

16 ¶ Then Herod when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yeares old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken

*Jer. 31. 15.

by * Jeremie the prophet, saying,

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young childe and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young childes life.

21 And he arose, and took the young childe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

CHAP. III.

1 *John preacheth: his office, life, and baptisme.* 7 *He reprehendeth the Pharisees,* 13 *and baptizeth Christ in Jordan.*

* Mark 1. 4. Luke 3. 2.

IN those dayes came * John the Baptist, preaching in the wildernesse of Judea,

2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdome of heaven is at hand.

* Isa. 40. 3. Mark 1. 3.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, * The voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loyns, and his meat was locusts and wilde hony.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan,

6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sinnes.

7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptisme, he said unto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

* Chap. 12. 34.

8 Bring forth therefore fruits || meet for repentance.

|| Or, answerable to amendment of life.

9 And think not to say within your selves, * We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

* John 8. 39.

10 And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: * therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewen down, and cast into the fire.

*Chap. 7. 19.

11 * I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthy to beare: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

* Mark 1. 8. Luke 3. 16. John 1. 26.

12 Whose fanne is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floore, and gather his wheat into the garner: but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

13 ¶ * Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

*Mark 1. 9. Luke 3. 21.

14 But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

15 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfill all righteousnesse. Then he suffered him.

16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him.

17 And lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Christ fasteth, and is tempted.* 11 *The angels minister unto him.* 13 *He dwelleth in Capernaum,* 17 *beginneth to preach,* 18 *calleth Peter and Andrew,* 21 *James and John,* 23 *and healeth all the diseased.*

THen was * Jesus led up of the spirit into the wildernesse, to be tempted of the devil.

* Mark 1. 12. Luke 4. 1.

2 And when he had fasted fourty dayes and fourty nights, he was afterward an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the sonne of God, command that these stones be made bread.

4 But he answered and said, It is written, * Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

*Deut. 8. 3.

5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy citie, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,

6 And saith unto him, If thou be the sonne of God, cast thy self down: for it is written, * He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

*Psal 91. 11.

7 Jesus said unto him, It is written again, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

* Deut. 6. 16.

8 Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glory of them:

9 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

10 Then

10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serve.
11 Then the devil leaveth him, and behold, angels came and ministred unto him.
12 ¶ * Now when Jesus had heard that John was ‖ cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.
13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthali:
14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,
15 * The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthali, by the way of the sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles:
16 The people which sat in darkness, saw great light: and to them which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.
17 ¶ * From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent, for the kingdome of heaven is at hand.
18 ¶ * And Jesus walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon, called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers)
19 And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.
20 And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.
21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James the sonne of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them.
22 And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.
23 ¶ And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdome, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people.
24 And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases, and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatick, and those that had the palsie, and he healed them.
25 And there followed him great multitudes of people, from Galilee, and from Decapolis, and from Jerusalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ beginneth his sermon in the mount: 3 declaring who are blessed, 13 who are the salt of the earth, 14 the light of the world, the city on an hill, 15 the candle: 17 that he came to fulfill the law: 21 what it is to kill, 27 to commit adultery, 33 to swear: 38 exhorteth to suffer wrong, 44 to love even our enemies, 48 and to labour after perfectnesse.

AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.
2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,
3 * Blessed are the poore in spirit: for theirs is the kingdome of heaven.
4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.
5 * Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.
6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousnesse: * for they shall be filled.
7 Blessed are the mercifull: for they shall obtain mercy.
8 * Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.
9 Blessed are the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.
10 * Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousnesse sake: for theirs is the kingdome of heaven.
11 Blessed are ye when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of * evil against you ‖ falsely for my sake.
12 Rejoyce, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.
13 ¶ Ye are the salt of the earth: * but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be troden under foot of men.
14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill, cannot be hid.
15 Neither do men * light a candle, and put it under ‖ a bushel: but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.
16 Let your light so shine before men, * that they may see your good works, and glorifie your Father which is in heaven.
17 ¶ Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.
18 For verily I say unto you, * Till heaven and earth passe, one jote or one title shall in no wise passe from the law, till all be fulfilled.
19 * Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdome of heaven: but whosoever shall do, and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heaven.
20 For I say unto you, that except your righteousnesse shall exceed the righteousnesse of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdome of heaven.
21 ¶ Ye have heard, that it was said ‖ by them of old time, * Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgement.
22 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Racha, shall be in danger of the councel: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.
23 Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought against thee;
24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.
25 * Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him, lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison.
26 Verily, I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.
27 ¶ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not commit adultery.
28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.
29 * And if thy right eye ‖ offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.
30 And

735

*Psal. 24. 4.
*1. Pet. 3. 14.
*1. Pet. 4. 14.
‖ Or, lying.
*Mark 9. 50 Luke 14. 34.
*Mark 4. 21. Luke 8. 16. and 11. 33.
‖ The word in the originall signifieth a measure containing about a pinte lesse then a peck.
*1. Pet. 2. 12.
*Luke 16. 17
*Jam. 2. 10.
‖ Or, to them.
*Exod. 20. 13 Deut. 5. 17.
*Luke 12. 58
*Exod. 20. 14
*Chap. 18. 8 Mark 9. 43.
‖ Or, do cause thee to offend.

*Deut. 6. 13. and 10. 20.
*Mark 1. 14. Luke 4. 14. John 4. 43. ‖ deliver-up.
*Isa. 9. 1.
*Mark 1. 14
*Mark 1. 16
*Luke 6. 20.
*Psal. 37. 11.
*Isa. 65. 13.

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

*Deut. 24. 1. 31 It hath been said, * Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement.

*Luk. 16. 18. 1. Cor. 7. 10. 32 But I say unto you, that * whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

*Exod. 20. 7. Lev. 19. 12. Deut. 5. 11. 33 ¶ Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not forswear thy self, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oathes.

34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all, neither by heaven, for it is Gods throne:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.

* Jam. 5. 12. 37 * But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more then these, cometh of evil.

*Exod. 21. 24. Lev. 24. 20. Deut. 19. 21. * Luk. 6. 29. Rom. 12. 17. 1. Cor. 6. 1. 38 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, * An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

39 But I say unto you, * that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.

41 And whosoever shall compell thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

* Deut. 15. 8. 42 Give to him that asketh thee, and * from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away.

* Lev. 19. 18. 43 ¶ Ye have heard that it hath been said, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy.

* Luk. 6. 27. 44 But I say unto you, * Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray * for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you:

*Luk. 23. 34. Acts 7. 60. 45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sunne to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

* Luk. 6. 32. 46 * For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the Publicanes the same?

47 And if ye salute your brethren onely, what do you more then others? do not even the Publicanes so?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ continueth his sermon in the mount, speaking of almes, 5 prayer, 14 forgiving our brethren, 16 fasting, 19 where our treasure is to be laid up, 24 of serving God and mammon: 25 exhorteth, not to be carefull for worldly things; 33 but to seek Gods kingdome.

TAke heed that ye do not your almes before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward ‖ of your Father which is in heaven.

‖ Or, with.

2 Therefore, * when thou doest thine almes, ‖ do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

* Rom. 12. 8. ‖ Or, cause not a trumpet to be sounded.

3 But when thou doest almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth:

4 That thine almes may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy doore, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, use not vain * repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

9 After this manner therefore pray ye: * Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name.

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debters.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdome, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

14 * For, if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you.

15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appeare unto men to fast. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

17 But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face:

18 That thou appeare not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not up for your selves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where theeves break through and steal.

20 * But lay up for your selves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where theeves do not break through nor steal.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

22 * The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light.

23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darknesse. If therefore the light that is in thee be darknesse, how great is that darknesse!

24 ¶ * No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

25 Therefore I say unto you, * Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your bodie, what ye shall put on: is not the life more then meat, and the body then raiment?

26 Behold the fowls of the aire: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking thought can adde one cubit unto his stature?

28 And

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spinne.

29 And yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or wherewithall shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

33 But seek ye first the kingdome of God, and his righteousnesse, and all these things shall be added unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it self: sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ ending his sermon in the mount, reproveth rash judgement, 6 forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs, 7 exhorteth to prayer, 13 to enter in at the strait gate, 15 to beware of false prophets, 21 not to be hearers, but doers of the word: 24 like houses builded on a rock, 26 and not on the sand.

* Luke 6.37. Rom. 2.1. * Mar. 4.24. Luke 6.38. * Luke 6.41.

* JUdge not, that ye be not judged.

2 For with what judgement ye judge, ye shall be judged: * and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

3 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and behold, a beam is in thine own eye?

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you.

* Chap. 21. 22. Mark 11.24. Luke 11.9. John 16.24. James 1.6.

7 ¶ * Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall finde; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

8 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his sonne ask bread, will he give him a stone?

10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

* Luke 6.31. 12 Therefore all things * whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

* Luke 13.24. 13 ¶ * Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat:

‖ Or, how. 14 ‖ Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that finde it.

15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: * Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? 7.37 * Luke 6.43.

17 Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 * Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down and cast into the fire. * Chap. 3.10.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 ¶ Not every one that saith unto me, * Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdome of heaven: but he that doth the will of my Father which is in heaven. * Rom. 2.13. James 1.22.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderfull works?

23 And then will I profesſe unto them, * I never knew you: * depart from me ye that work iniquitie. * Luke 13.27. * Psal. 6.8.

24 ¶ Therefore, * whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them, I will liken him unto a wise man which built his house upon a rock: * Luke 6.47.

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man which built his house upon the sand:

27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to passe when Jesus had ended these sayings, * the people were astonished at his doctrine. * Mark 1.22. Luke 4.32.

29 For he taught them as one having authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

2 Christ cleanseth the leper, 5 healeth the centurions servant, 14 Peters mother in law, 16 and many other diseased, 18 sheweth how he is to be followed, 23 stilleth the tempest on the sea, 28 driveth the devils out of two men possessed, 31 and suffereth them to go into the swine.

WHen he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

* Mark 1.40. Luke 5.12. 2 * And behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

3 And Jesus put forth his hand and touched him, saying, I will, be thou clean. And immediately his leprosie was cleansed.

* Levit. 14.4. 4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man, but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer the gift that * Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

* Luke 7.1. 5 ¶ * And when Jesus was entred into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him,

6 And saying, Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsie, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word onely, and my servant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authoritie, having

738 | souldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth: & to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdome of heaven.

12 But the children of the kingdome shall be cast out into outer darknesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast beleeved, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self same houre.

*Mark 1.29. Luke 4.38. 14 ¶ * And when Jesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wives mother laid, and sick of a fever.

15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose and ministred unto them.

*Mark 1.32. Luke 4.40. 16 ¶ * When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick:

*Isa. 53.4. 1. Pet. 2.24. 17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, * Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart unto the other side.

*Luke 9.57. 19 * And a certain scribe came, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the aire have nests; but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and burie my father.

22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me, and let the dead burie their dead.

23 ¶ And when he was entred into a ship, his disciples followed him.

*Mar. 4.37. Luke 8.23. 24 * And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearfull, O ye of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the windes and the sea, and there was a great calm.

27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the windes and the sea obey him?

*Mark 5.1. Luke 8.26. 28 ¶ * And when he was come to the other side, into the countrey of the Gergesens, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombes, exceeding fierce, so that no man might passe by that way.

29 And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus thou Sonne of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine, feeding.

31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them fled, and went their wayes into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

34 And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus; and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

CHAP. IX.

2 Christ curing one sick of the palsie, 9 calleth Matthew from the receit of custome, 10 eateth with Publicanes and sinners, 14 defendeth his disciples for not fasting, 20 cureth the bloudie issue, 23 raiseth from death Jairus daughter, 27 giveth sight to two blinde men, 32 healeth a dumbe man possessed of a devil, 36 and hath compassion of the multitude.

AND he entred into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city.

2 * And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsie, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsie, Sonne, be of good cheere, thy sinnes be forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?

5 For whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiven thee? or to say, Arise and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgive sinnes, (then saith he to the sick of the palsie) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

*Matth. Luke 9 ¶ * And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man named Matthew, sitting at the receit of custome: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

10 ¶ And it came to passe, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many Publicanes and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your master with Publicanes and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, * I will have mercie, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, * but sinners to repentance.

*Hosea 6.6. Chap. 12.7. *1. Tim. 1.15.

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, * Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

*Mark 2.18. Luke 5.33.

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the dayes will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of ‖ new cloth unto an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it up, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

‖ Or, raw unwrought cloth.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

18 ¶ * While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler and wor-

*Mark 5. Luke 8.

shipped

shipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 ¶ (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of bloud twelve yeares, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For she said within her self, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that houre.)

23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels and the people making a noise,

24 He said unto them, Give place; for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And ‖ the fame hereof went abroad into all that land.

‖ *Or*, this fame.

27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou sonne of David, have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Beleeve ye that I am able to do this? they said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ * As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a devil.

* Luke 11. 14.

33 And when the devil was cast out, the dumbe spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, * He casteth out the devils through the prince of the devils.

* Chap. 12. 24. Mark 3.22. Luke 11.15.

35 * And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdome, and healing every sickneſſe, and every disease among the people.

* Mark 6.6. Luke 13.22.

36 ¶ * But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them; because they ‖ fainted, and were scattered abroad, * as sheep having no shepherd.

* Mark 6.34

‖ *Or*, were tired and lay down.

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, * The harvest truely is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

* Num. 27. 17.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

* Luke 10.2.

CHAP. X.

1 *Christ sendeth out his twelve apostles, enabling them with power to do miracles,* 5 *giveth them their charge, teacheth them,* 16 *comforteth them against persecutions,* 40 *and promiseth a blessing to those that receive them.*

AND * when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power ‖ against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickneſſe, and all manner of disease.

* Mark 3.14 Luke 9.1.

‖ *Or*, over.

2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these, The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James the sonne of Zebedee, and John his brother,

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas, and Matthew the Publicane, James the sonne of Alpheus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus,

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritanes enter ye not.

6 * But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

* Acts 13.46

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, * The kingdome of heaven is at hand.

* Luke 10.9.

8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

9 * ‖ Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brasse in your purses:

* Mark 6.8. Luke 9.3. and 22.35.

10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: (* for the workman is worthy of his meat)

‖ *Or*, get.

* Luke 10.7. 1.Tim.5.18.

11 * And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till ye go thence.

* Luke 10.8

12 And when ye come into an house, salute it.

13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

14 * And whosoever shall not receive you, nor heare your words: when ye depart out of that house, or city, * shake off the dust of your feet.

* Mark 6.11

* Acts 13.51

15 Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah, in the day of judgement, then for that city.

16 ¶ * Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and ‖ harmlesse as doves.

* Luke 10.3.

‖ *Or*, simple.

17 But beware of men, for they will deliver you up to the councels, and they will scourge you in their synagogues.

18 And ye shall be brought before governours and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

19 * But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for it shall be given you in that same houre what ye shall speak.

* Mark 13. 11. Luke 12.11.

20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

21 * And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the childe: and the children shall rise up against their parents, and cause them to be put to death.

* Luke 21. 16.

22 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake: * but he that endureth to the end, shall be saved.

* Mark 13. 13.

23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, ye shall not ‖ have gone over the cities of Israel till the Sonne of man be come.

‖ *Or*, end, *or* finish.

24 * The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord.

* Luke 6.40 John 13. 16.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

26 Fear them not therefore: * for there is nothing covered that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known.

* Mark 4.22 Luke 8.17. and 12.2.

27 What I tell you in darknesse, that speak ye in light: and what ye heare in the eare, that preach ye upon the house tops.

28 * And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a ‖farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father.

30 * But the very hairs of your head are all numbred.

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

32 * Whosoever therefore shall confesse me before men, him will I confesse also before my Father which is in heaven.

33 * But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

34 * Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance * against his father, and the daughter against her mother; and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

36 And a mans foes shall be they of his own houshold.

37 * He that loveth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth sonne or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

38 * And he that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 * He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall finde it.

40 ¶ * He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophets reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

42 * And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold water onely, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

* Luke 12.4.
‖ It is in value halfpeny farthing, in the originall, as being the tenth part of the Romane peny.
* 2. Sam. 14. 11.
Acts 27. 34.
* Luke 12. 8
* Mark 8. 38
Luke 9. 26.
2. Tim. 2. 12.
* Luke 12. 51.
* Micah 7. 6
* Luke 14. 26
* Chap. 16. 24.
Luke 9. 23.
Mark 8. 34.
* John 12. 25
* Luke 10. 16.
John 13. 20.
* Mark 9. 41

CHAP. XI.

2 John sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christs testimony concerning John. 18 The opinion of the people, both concerning John and Christ. 20 Christ upbraideth the unthankfulnesse, and unrepentance of Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum: 25 and praising his Fathers wisdome in revealing the gospel to the simple, 28 he calleth to him all such as feel the burden of their sinnes.

AND it came to passe, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 * Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do heare and see:

5 * The blinde receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf heare, the dead are raised up, and * the poore have the gospel preached to them.

6 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wildernesse to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing, are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea I say unto you, and more then a prophet.

10 For this is he of whom it is written, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater then John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdome of heaven, is greater then he.

12 * And from the dayes of John the Baptist, untill now, the kingdome of heaven ‖suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the prophets, and the law prophesied untill John.

14 And if ye will receive it, this is * Elias which was for to come.

15 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

16 ¶ * But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows,

17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented.

18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil.

19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold, a man gluttonous, and a wine-bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners: but wisdome is justified of her children.

20 ¶ * Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

21 Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained untill this day.

24 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgement, then for thee.

25 ¶ * At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

26 Even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 * All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Sonne but the Father: * neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Sonne, and he to whomsoever the Sonne will reveal him.

28 ¶ Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my yoke upon you and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: * and ye shall finde rest unto your souls.

30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden is light.

* Luke 7. 18
* Isa. 35. 6.
* Isa. 61. 1.
* Mal. 3. 1.
* Luke 16. 16.
‖ Or, is gotten by force, and they that thrust men.
* Mal. 4. 5.
* Luke 7. 28.
* Luke 10. 13.
* Luke 10. 21.
* John 3. 35.
* John 6. 46.
* Jer. 6. 16.
* 1. John 5. 3.

CHAP. XII.

1 *Christ reproveth the blindenesse of the Pharisees concerning the breach of the sabbath, 3 by scriptures, 9 by reason, 13 and by a miracle. 22 He healeth the man possessed that was blinde & dumbe. 31 Blasphemy against the holy Ghost shall never be forgiven. 36 Account shall be made of idle words. 38 He rebuketh the unfaithfull who seek after a signe, 49 and sheweth who is his brother, sister, and mother.*

AT that time * Jesus went on the sabbath-day through the corn, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the eares of corn, and to eat.

* Deut. 23. 25. Mar. 2. 23. Luke 6. 1.

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawfull to do upon the sabbath-day.

3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read * what David did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him,

* 1. Sam. 21. 6

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawfull for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, * but onely for the priests?

* Exod. 29. 32, 33. Levit. 8. 31. and 24. 9.

5 Or have ye not read in the * law, how that on the sabbath-dayes the priests in the temple prophane the sabbath, and are blamelesse?

* Num. 28. 9

6 But I say unto you, that in this place is one greater then the temple.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, * I will have mercy and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltlesse.

* Hose. 6. 6. Chap. 9. 13.

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord even of the sabbath-day.

9 * And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue.

* Mar. 3. 1. Luke 6. 6.

10 ¶ And behold, there was a man which had his hand withered: and they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heal on the sabbath-dayes? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 How much then is a man better then a sheep? wherefore it is lawfull to do well on the sabbath-dayes.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

14 ¶ Then the Pharisees went out, and ‖ held a counsel against him, how they might destroy him.

‖ Or, took counsel.

15 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they should not make him known:

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

* Isa. 42. 1

18 * Behold, my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgement to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not strive, nor cry, neither shall any man heare his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgement unto victory.

21 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

22 ¶ * Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blinde and dumbe: and he healed him, insomuch that the blinde and dumbe both spake and saw.

* Luke 11. 14.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is this the sonne of David?

741

24 * But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

* Chap. 9. 34.

25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdome divided against it self, is brought to desolation: and every city or house divided against it self, shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdome stand?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges.

28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdome of God is come unto you.

29 Or else how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he first binde the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

30 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

31 ¶ Wherefore I say unto you, * All manner of sinne and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

* Mar. 3. 28. Luke 12. 10. 1. John 5. 16

32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? * for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

* Luke 6. 45.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart, bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure, bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 ¶ * Then certain of the Scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a signe from thee.

* Chap. 16. 1 Luke 11. 29. 1. Cor. 1. 22.

39 But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given to it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas.

40 * For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Sonne of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.

* Jonah 1. 17

41 The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgement with this generation, and shall condemne it, * because they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

* Jonah 3. 5.

42 * The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemne it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to heare the wisdome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

* 1. Kings 10. 1.

43 * When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

* Luke 11. 24.

44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and

they enter in and dwell there: * and the last state of that man is worse then the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

* Hebr. 6. 4. and 10. 26. 2. Pet. 2. 20.

46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, * behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

* Mar. 3. 31. Luke 8. 20.

47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

48 But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

3 *The parable of the sower and the seed:* 18 *the exposition of it.* 24 *The parable of the tares,* 31 *of the mustard-seed,* 33 *of the leaven,* 44 *of the hidden treasure,* 45 *of the pearl,* 47 *of the draw-net cast into the sea,* 53 *and how Christ is contemned of his own countreymen.*

THe same day went Jesus out of the house, * and sat by the sea side.

* Mar. 4. 1.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, * Behold, a sower went forth to sow.

* Luke 8. 5.

4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the wayes side, and the fowls came and devoured them up.

5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepnesse of earth:

6 And when the sunne was up, they were scorched; and because they had not root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns: and the thorns sprung up and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundred fold, some sixty fold, some thirty fold.

9 Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdome of heaven, but to them it is not given.

* Chap. 25. 29.

12 * For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away, even that he hath.

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing, they heare not, neither do they understand.

* Isa. 6. 9. Mar. 4. 12. Luke 8. 10. John 12. 40. Acts 28. 26. Rom. 11. 8.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophesie of Esaias, which saith, * By hearing ye shall heare, and shall not understand: and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed grosse, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see; and your eares, for they heare.

17 For verily I say unto you, * that many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them: and to heare those things which ye heare, and have not heard them.

18 ¶ Heare ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdome, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sowen in his heart: this is he which received seed by the way side.

20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it:

21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that received seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word: and the care of this world, and the deceitfulnesse of riches choke the word, and he becometh unfruitfull.

23 But he that received seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it: which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth some an hundred fold, some sixty, some thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdome of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and binde them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, * The kingdome of heaven is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took and sowed in his field.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree: so that the birds of the aire come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 ¶ * Another parable spake he unto them, The kingdome of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three † measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

34 * All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not unto them:

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, * I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the Sonne of man:
38 The field is the world: the good seed are the children of the kingdome: but the tares are the children of the wicked one:
39 The enemy that sowed them, is the devil: * the harvest is the end of the world: and the reapers are the angels.
40 As therefore the tares are gathered & burnt in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.
41 The Sonne of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdome all ‖ things that offend, and them which do iniquity:
42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.
43 * Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sunne, in the kingdome of their Father. Who hath eares to heare, let him heare.
44 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.
45 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto a merchant man seeking goodly pearls:
46 Who when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, and bought it.
47 ¶ Again, the kingdome of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kinde.
48 Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.
49 So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just:
50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.
51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.
52 Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdome of heaven, is like unto a man that is an housholder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.
53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.
54 * And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdome, and these mighty works?
55 * Is not this the carpenters sonne? is not his mother called Mary? & his brethren, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas?
56 And his sisters, are they not all with us? whence then hath this man all these things?
57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus said unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, save in his own country, & in his own house.
58 And he did not many mighty works there, because of their unbelief.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 *Herods opinion of Christ.* 3 *Wherefore John Baptist was beheaded.* 13 *Jesus departeth into a desert place:* 15 *where he feedeth five thousand men with five loaves and two fishes.* 22 *He walketh on the sea to his disciples:* 34 *and landing at Genezaret, healeth the sick by the touch of the hemme of his garment.*

AT that time * Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus,
2 And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works ‖ do shew forth themselves in him.
3 ¶ * For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife.
4 For John said unto him, * It is not lawfull for thee to have her.
5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, * because they counted him as a prophet.
6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.
7 Whereupon he promised with an oath, to give her whatsoever she would ask.
8 And she, being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptists head in a charger.
9 And the king was sorry: nevertheless for the oaths sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.
10 And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.
11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought it to her mother.
12 And his disciples came, and took up the body and buried it, and went and told Jesus.
13 ¶ * When Jesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.
14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.
15 ¶ * And when it was evening his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.
16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat.
17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.
18 He said, Bring them hither to me.
19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grasse, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.
20 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full.
21 And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.
22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.
23 * And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: * and when the evening was come, he was there alone.
24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the winde was contrary.
25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them walking on the sea.
26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.
27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.
28 And

* Joel 3.13. Revel.14. 15.
‖ Or, scandals
* Dan.12.3.
* Mark 6.1. Luke 4.16.
* John 6.42.
* Mark 6.4. Luke 4.24. John 4.44.
* Mark 6.14. Luke 9.7.
‖ Or, are wrought by him.
* Luke 3. 19,20.
* Levit.18. 16. and 20. 21.
* Chap.21. 26.
* Mark 6.32. Luke 9.10.
* Mark 6.35. John 6.5.
* Mark 6.46.
* John 6.16.

744

28 And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.
29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water to go to Jesus.
30 But when he saw the winde ‖ boisterous, he was afraid: and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord save me.
31 And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?
32 And when they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.
33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Sonne of God.
34 ¶ * And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.
35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased,
36 And besought him, that they might onely touch the hemme of his garment: and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

‖ Or, strong.
* Mark 6. 53.

CHAP. XV.

3 Christ reproveth the Scribes and Pharisees, for transgressing Gods commandments through their own traditions, 11 teacheth how that which goeth into the mouth, doth not defile a man. 21 He healeth the daughter of the woman of Canaan, 30 and other great multitudes: 32 and with seven loaves, and a few little fishes, feedeth foure thousand men, besides women and children.

THen * came to Jesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,
2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.
3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgresse the commandment of God by your tradition?
4 For God commanded, saying, * Honour thy father and mother: and * he that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.
5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, * It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me,
6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.
7 Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesie of you, saying,
8 * This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is farre from me.
9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.
10 ¶ * And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Heare and understand.
11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.
12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying?
13 But he answered and said, * Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.
14 Let them alone: * they be blinde leaders of the blinde. And if the blinde lead the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch.
15 * Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.
16 And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?
17 Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entreth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?
18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.
19 * For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witnesse, blasphemies.
20 These are the things which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.
21 ¶ * Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.
22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou sonne of David, my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.
23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after us.
24 But he answered and said, * I am not sent, but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.
25 Then came she and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.
26 But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.
27 And she said, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbes which fall from their masters table.
28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very houre.
29 * And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee, and went up into a mountain, and sat down there.
30 * And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blinde, dumbe, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus feet, and he healed them:
31 Insomuch that the multitude wondred when they saw the dumbe to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.
32 ¶ * Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three dayes, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.
33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wildernesse, as to fill so great a multitude?
34 And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? and they said, Seven, and a few little fishes.
35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.
36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.
37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets full.
38 And they that did eat, were foure thousand men, beside women and children.
39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

* Mark 7. 1.
* Exod. 20. 12. Deut 5. 16.
* Exod. 21. 17. Levit. 20. 9. Prov. 20. 20.
* Mark 7. 11, 12.
* Isa. 29. 13.
* Mark 7. 14.
* John 15. 2.
* Luke 6. 39.
* Mark 7.
* Isa. 35.
* Mark 8.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The Pharisees require a signe. 6 Jesus warneth his disciples of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. 13 The peoples opinion of Christ, 16 and Peters confession of him. 21 Jesus foreshewth his death, 23 reproving Peter for disswading him from it. 24 And admonisheth those that will follow him, to bear the crosse.

THe * Pharisees also with the Sadducees, came, and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a signe from heaven.

*Mark 8.11 Luke 12.54.

2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the skie is red.

3 And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, but can ye not discern the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given unto it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among your selves, because ye have brought no bread?

9 * Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

*Chap. 13.17

10 * Neither the seven loaves of the foure thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

*Chap. 15.34

11 How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?

12 Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, & of the Sadducees.

13 ¶ When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, * Whom do men say, that I, the Sonne of man, am?

*Mark 8.27 Luke 9.18.

14 And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist, some Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered and said, * Thou art Christ the Sonne of the living God.

* John 6.69

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and bloud hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

18 And I say also unto thee, that * thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my church: and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

* John 1.42

19 * And I will give unto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt binde on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

*John 20.23

20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests, and Scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it farre from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

745

23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behinde me, Satan, thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

24 ¶ * Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse, and follow me.

*Chap. 10.38 Mark 8.34.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

27 For the Sonne of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels: * and then he shal reward every man according to his works.

*Psal. 62.12. Rom. 2.6.

28 Verily I say unto you, * There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Sonne of man coming in his kingdome.

*Mark 9.1. Luke 9.27.

CHAP. XVII.

1 The transfiguration of Christ. 14 He healeth the lunatick, 22 foretelleth his own passion, 24 and payeth tribute.

AND * after six dayes Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,

*Mark 9.2. Luke 9.28.

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sunne, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 * While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Sonne, in whom I am well pleased; heare ye him.

* 2. Pet. 1.17.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Sonne of man be risen again from the dead.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, * Why then say the Scribes, that Elias must first come?

*Chap. 11.14 Mark 9.11.

11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things:

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise shall also the Sonne of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying,

*Mark 9.17 Luke 9.38.

15 Lord, have mercy on my sonne, for he is lunatick, and sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered and said, O faithlesse and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you

with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him: and the childe was cured from that very houre.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, * If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove; and nothing shall be unpossible unto you.

21 Howbeit this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

22 ¶ * And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Sonne of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again: and they were exceeding sory.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received ‖ tribute-money, came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custome or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde ‖ a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Christ warneth his disciples to be humble and harmlesse, 7 to avoid offences, and not to despise the little ones: 15 teacheth how we are to deal with our brethren, when they offend us, 21 and how oft to forgive them; 23 which he setteth forth by a parable of the king, that took account of his servants, 32 and punished him who shewed no mercy to his fellow.

AT * the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heaven?

2 And Jesus called a little childe unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, * Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heaven.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little childe, the same is greatest in the kingdome of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little childe in my name, receiveth me.

6 * But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which beleeve in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

7 ¶ Wo unto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh.

8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then having two hands or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

11 * For the Sonne of man is come to save that which was lost.

12 * How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray?

13 And if so be that he finde it, verily I say unto you, he rejoyceth more of that sheep, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

15 ¶ Moreover, * if thy brother shall trespasse against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall heare thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

16 But if he will not heare thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in * the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.

17 And if he shall neglect to heare them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to heare the church, let him be unto thee as an * heathen man, and a publicane.

18 Verily I say unto you, * Whatsoever ye shall binde on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said: Lord, how oft shall my brother sinne against me, and I forgive him? * till seven times?

22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Untill seven times: but, untill seventy times seven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdome of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him which ought him ten thousand ‖ talents.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down, & ‖ worshipped him, saying, Lord have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which ought him an hundred ‖ pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done,

*Luke 17.6

*Chap.20. 17. Mark 9.31. Luke 9.44.

‖ Called in the original Didrachma, being in value fifteen pence.

‖ *Or*, a stater. It is half an ounce of silver, in value two shillings six pence, after five shillings the ounce.

*Mark 9.33. Luke 9.46.

* Chap.19. 14. 1. Cor. 14. 20.

*Mark 9.42. Luke 17. 1, 2.

*Chap. 5.30. Mark 9.45.

*Luke 19. 10. *Luke 15.4.

*Lev.19.17. Luke 17.3.

*Deut.19.15 John 8.17. 2.Cor.13.1. Hebr.10.28.

*1.Cor.5.3. 2.Thes.3.14. *John 20.23. 1.Cor.5.4

*Luke 17.4

‖ A talent is 750 ounces of silver, which after five shillings the ounce, is 187. li. 10. shillings.

& *Or*, besought him.

‖ The Romane peny is the eighth part of an ounce, which after five shillings the ounce, is seven pence half-peny.

done, they were very sory, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentours, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

2 Christ healeth the sick: 3 answereth the Pharisees concerning divorcement: 10 sheweth when marriage is necessary: 13 receiveth little children: 16 instructeth the young man how to attain eternall life, 20 and how to be perfect: 23 telleth his disciples how hard it is for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God: 27 and promiseth reward to those that forsake any thing, to follow him.

* Mark 10.1. AND it came to passe, * that when Jesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan:

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

* Gen. 1.27. 4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, * that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female?

* Gen. 2.24. Ephes. 5. 31. * 1. Cor. 6.16 5 And said, * For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and * they twain shall be one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put asunder.

* Deut. 24. 1. 7 They say unto him, * Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

8 He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardnesse of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

* Chap. 5. 32 Mar. 10. 11. Luke 16. 18. 1. Cor. 7. 11. 9 * And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery.

10 ¶ His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mothers wombe: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdome of heavens sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

* Mar. 10. 13. Luke 18. 15. 13 ¶ Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me: for of such is the kingdome of heaven.

15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

16 ¶ * And behold, one came and said unto him, Good master, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternall life? 747 * Mar. 10. 17 Luke 18. 18.

17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, * Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witnesse, * Exod 20. 13

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

20 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poore, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdome of heaven.

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is unpossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 ¶ * Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee, what shall we have therefore? *Mar. 10. 28. Luke 18. 28.

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, * ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. * Luke 22. 30

29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my names sake, shall receive an hundred fold, and shall inherit everlasting life. * Chap. 20. 16. Mar. 10. 31. Luke 13. 30

30 * But many that are first, shall be last; and the last shall be first.

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ by the similitude of the labourers in the vineyard, sheweth that God is debter unto no man, 17 foretelleth his passion, 20 by answering the mother of Zebedees children, teacheth his disciples to be lowly, 30 and giveth two blinde men their sight.

FOr the kingdome of heaven is like unto a man that is an housholder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a || peny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third houre, and saw others standing idle in the market-place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth houre, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh houre he went out, and

|| The Romane peny is the eighth part of an ounce, which after five thillings the ounce, yeeldeth

748

and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.

9 And when they came that were hired about the eleventh houre, they received every man a peny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more, and they likewise received every man a peny.

11 And when they had received it, they murmured against the good man of the house,

12 Saying, These last ‖ have wrought but one houre, and thou hast made them equall unto us, which have born the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a peny?

14 Take that thine is, and go thy way; I will give unto this last, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil because I am good?

16 * So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

17 ¶ * And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death,

19 * And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock and to scourge, and to crucifie him: and the third day he shall rise again.

20 ¶ * Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children, with her sonnes, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sonnes may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdome.

22 But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able.

23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, * Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great, exercise authority upon them.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister.

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant.

28 Even as the * Sonne of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransome for many.

29 * And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.

30 ¶ And behold, two blinde men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou sonne of David.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou sonne of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Jesus had compassion on them, and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ rideth into Jerusalem upon an asse, 12 driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple, 17 curseth the fig-tree, 23 putteth to silence the priests and elders, 28 and rebuketh them by the similitude of the two sonnes, 35 and the husbandmen: who slew such as were sent unto them.

AND * when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall finde an asse tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them, and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5 * Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an asse, and a colt the foal of an asse.

6 * And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,

7 And brought the asse, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the sonne of David: blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord Hosanna in the highest.

10 * And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the citie was moved, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

13 And said unto them, It is written, * My house shall be called the house of prayer, * but ye have made it a den of theeves.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in the temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chief priests and Scribes saw the wonderfull things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the sonne of David; they were sore displeased,

16 And said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, * Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

17 ¶ And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now

‖ *Or*, have continued one houre onely.

* Chap. 19. 30.
* Mar. 10. 32. Luke 18. 31.

* John 18. 32.

* Mar. 10. 35

* Luke 22. 25

* Phil. 2. 7.

* Mar. 10. 46 Luke 18. 35.

* Mat. 11. Luke 19.

* Isa. 62. 11. Zech. 9. 9. John 12. * Mar. 11.

* Mar. 11. 15. Luke 19. 45. John 2. 13

* Isa. 56. 7. * Jer. 7. 11. Mar. 11. 17. Luke 19. 46.

* Psal. 8.

18 Now in the morning as he returned into the citie, he hungred.

19 * And when he saw a fig tree in the way he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only, and said unto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig tree withered away.

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-tree withered away!

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig-tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, it shall be done.

22 And all things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

23 ¶ * And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authoritie dost thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

24 And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.

25 The baptisme of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? and they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him?

26 But if we shall say, Of men; we fear the people, * for all hold John as a prophet.

27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

28 ¶ But what think you? A certain man had two sonnes, and he came to the first, and said, Sonne, go worke to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered and said, I will not; but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the Publicanes and the harlots go into the kingdome of God before you.

32 For * John came unto you in the way of righteousnesse, and ye believed him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots believed him. And ye when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

33 ¶ Heare another parable, There was a certain householder * which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepresse in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre country.

34 And when the time of the fruit drew neare, he sent his servants to the husbandmen; that they might receive the fruits of it.

35 And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Again, he sent other servants, more then the first: and they did unto them likewise.

37 But last of all, he sent unto them his sonne, saying, They will reverence my sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the sonne, they said among themselves, This is the heir, * come, let us kill him, and let us seise on his inheritance.

39 And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

40 When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

41 They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

42 Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders refused, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?

43 Therefore say I unto you, The kingdome of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And whosoever * shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The parable of the marriage of the kings sonne. 9 The vocation of the Gentiles. 12 The punishment of him that wanted the wedding garment. 15 Tribute ought to be paid to Cesar. 23 Christ confuteth the Sadduces for the resurrection. 34 answereth the lawyer, which is the first and great commandment. 41 and poseth the Pharisees about the Messias.

AND Jesus answered * and spake unto them again by parables, and said,

2 The kingdome of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his sonne,

3 And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.

4 Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:

6 And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their citie.

8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore into the high-wayes, and as many as ye shall finde, bid to the marriage.

10 So those servants went out into the high-wayes, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 ¶ And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was speechlesse.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Binde him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darknesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 * For many are called, but few are chosen.

15 ¶ * Then

Mark 11.

Mark 11.
Luke 20.1.

* Chap 14.5

* Chap. 3.8.

* Isa. 5.1.
Jer. 2.21.
Mark 12.1.
Luke 20.9.

Chap. 26.3
John 11.53.

* Luke 14.16
Rev. 19.9.

750

15 ¶ * Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might intangle him in his talk.
16 And they sent out unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.
17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? is it lawfull to give tribute unto Cesar, or not?
18 But Jesus perceived their wickednesse, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?
19 Shew me the tribute-money. And they brought unto him a || peny.
20 And he saith unto them, Whose is this image and || superscription?
21 They say unto him, Cesars. Then saith he unto them, * Render therefore unto Cesar, the things which are Cesars; and unto God, the things that are Gods.
22 When they had heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.
23 ¶ * The same day came to him the Sadduces, * which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,
24 Saying, Master, * Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.
25 Now there were with us seven brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother.
26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.
27 And last of all the woman died also.
28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.
29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do erre, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.
30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels of God in heaven.
31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,
32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.
33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.
34 ¶ * But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadduces to silence, they were gathered together.
35 Then one of them which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,
36 Master, which is the great commandment in the law?
37 Jesus said unto him, * Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy minde.
38 This is the first and great commandment.
39 And the second is like unto it, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.
40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.
41 ¶ * While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,
42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose sonne is he? They say unto him, The sonne of David.
43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,
44 The LORD said unto my Lord, * Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?

* Mark 12. 13. Luke 20. 20.
|| In value seven pence half-peny. Chap. 20. 2.
|| Or, inscription.
* Rom. 13. 7.
* Mark 12. 18. Luke 20. 27.
* Acts 23. 8.
* Deut. 25. 5.
* Exod. 3. 6.
* Mark 12. 28.
* Deut. 6. 5. Luke 10. 27.
* Lev. 19. 18
* Mark 12. 35. Luke 20. 41.
* Psal. 110. 1

45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his sonne?
46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man (from that day forth) ask him any moe questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 Christ admonisheth the people to follow the good doctrine, not the evil examples of the Scribes and Pharisees. 5 His disciples must beware of their ambition. 13 He denounceth eight woes against their hypocrisie and blindnesse: 34 and prophesieth of the destruction of Jerusalem.

Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,
2 Saying, The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat.
3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.
4 * For they binde heavy burdens, and grievous to be born, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers.
5 But all their works they do, for to be seen of men: * they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,
6 * And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,
7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.
8 * But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your master, even Christ, and all ye are brethren.
9 And call no man your father upon the earth: * for one is your father which is in heaven.
10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, even Christ.
11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant.
12 * And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased: and he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted.
13 ¶ But * wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye shut up the kingdome of heaven against men: for ye neither go in your selves, neither suffer ye them that are entring, to go in.
14 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye devoure widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayer; therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.
15 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye compasse sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the childe of hell then your selves.
16 Wo unto you, ye blinde guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing: but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debter.
17 Ye fools and blinde: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?
18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is || guilty.
19 Ye fools and blinde: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?
20 Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.
21 And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.
22 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

* Luke 11. 46.
* Luke 11. 38. Deut. 6. 7.
* Mat. 6. 38, 39. Luke 11. 39.
* James 3. 1.
* Mal. 1. 6.
* Luke 1. 11. and 18. 14.
* Luke 1. 52.
* Mark 12. 40. Luke 20. 47.
|| Or, debtor or bound.

23 Wo

23 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye pay tithe of mint and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgement, mercie, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

24 Ye blinde guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excesse.

26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

27 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanesse.

28 Even so ye also outwardly appeare righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisie and iniquitie.

29 Wo unto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; because ye build the tombes of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If we had been in the dayes of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your selves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and some of them ye shall kill and crucifie, and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from citie to citie:

35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, * from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, sonne of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

36 Verily I say unto you, all these things shall come upon this generation.

37 * O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, * and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would * I have gathered thy children together even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not?

38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Christ foretelleth the destruction of the temple: 3 what and how great calamities shall be before it. 29 The signes of his coming to judgement. 36 And because that day and houre is unknown, 42 we ought to watch like good servants, expecting every moment our masters coming.

AND * Jesus went out, and departed from the temple; and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, * There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 ¶ And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the signe of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrows.

9 * Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 And this gospel of the kingdome shall be preached in all the world, for a witnesse unto all nations, and then shall the end come.

15 * When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by * Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand)

16 Then let them which be in Judea, flee into the mountains.

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come down, to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him which is in the field, return back to take his clothes.

19 And wo unto them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes.

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day:

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those dayes should be shortned, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elects sake those dayes shall be shortned.

23 * Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there: beleeve it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signes and wonders, insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deceive the very elect.

25 Behold, I have told you before.

26 Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth: behold, he is in the secret chambers, beleeve it not.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west: so shall also the coming of the Sonne of man be.

28 * For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

29 ¶ Immediately after the tribulation of those dayes, * shall the sunne be darkned, and the moon shall not give her light, and the starres shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, * and they shall see the Sonne of man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory.

31 * And

751

* Luke 11. 42.
* Luke 11. 39.
* Gen. 4. 8.
* Luke 13. 34.
* 2. Chro. 24. 21.
* 2. Esd. 1. 30.
* Mark 13. 1. Luke 21. 5.
* Luke 19. 44.
* Chap. 10. 17. Luke 21. 12. John 16. 2.
* Mark 13. 14. * Dan. 9. 27.
* Mark 13. 21. Luke 17. 23.
* Luke 17. 37.
* Isa. 13. 10. Ezek. 32. 7. Joel 2. 31. Mark 13. 24. Luke 21. 25.
* Revel. 1. 7.

31 * And he shall send his angels ‖ with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the foure windes, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree: When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh:

33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is neare, even at the doores.

34 Verily I say unto you, this generation shall not passe, till all these things be fulfilled.

35 * Heaven and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

36 ¶ But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Sonne of man be.

38 * For as in the dayes that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, untill the day that Noe entred into the ark,

39 And knew not untill the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Sonne of man be.

40 * Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

42 ¶ * Watch therefore, for ye know not what houre your Lord doth come.

43 * But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thiefe would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an houre as you think not, the Sonne of man cometh.

45 * Who then is a faithfull and wise servant, whom his Lord hath made ruler over his houshold, to give them meat in due season?

46 Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he cometh, shall finde so doing.

47 Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming,

49 And shall begin to smite his fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken:

50 The Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of;

51 And shall ‖ cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

752
* 1. Cor. 15. 52. 1. Thess. 4. 16
‖ Or, with a trumpet, and a great voice.
* Mark 13. 31.
* Gen. 7. Luke 17. 26.
* Luke 17. 36.
* Mark 13. 35. * Luke 12. 39. 1. Thess. 5. 2. Revel. 16. 15.
* Luke 12. 42.
‖ Or, cut him off.

CHAP. XXV.

1 *The parable of the ten virgins*, 14 *and of the talents.* 31 *Also the description of the last judgement.*

THen shall the kingdome of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

3 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oyl with them:

4 But the wise took oyl in their vessels with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbred and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps.

8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oyl, for our lamps are ‖ gone out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there be not enough for us and you, but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the doore was shut.

11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

13 * Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the houre, wherein the Sonne of man cometh.

14 ¶ * For the kingdome of heaven is as a man travelling into a farre country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.

15 And unto one he gave five ‖ talents, to another two, and to another one, to every man according to his severall abilitie, and straightway took his journey.

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long time, the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents, behold, I have gained besides them five talents moe.

21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithfull servant, thou hast been faithfull over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He also that had received two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithfull servant, thou hast been faithfull over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent, came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sowen, and gathering where thou hast not strawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothfull servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usurie.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

29 * For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.

30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darknesse, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ When

31 ¶ When the Sonne of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory.

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd diuideth his sheep from the goats.

33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then shall the king say unto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherite the kingdome prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirstie, and gave thee drink?

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the king shall answer, and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, in as much as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, * Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, in as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 And * these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternall.

Isa. 58. 7. Ezek. 18. 7.

*Psal. 6. 8. Chap. 7. 23.

* Dan. 12. 2. John 5. 29.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 The rulers conspire against Christ. 6 The woman anointeth his feet. 14 Judas selleth him. 17 Christ eateth the passeover: 26 instituteth his holy supper, 36 prayeth in the garden: 47 and being betrayed with a kisse, 57 is carried to Caiaphas, 69 and denied of Peter.

AND it came to passe, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

2 * Ye know that after two dayes is the feast of the passeover, and the Sonne of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3 * Then assembled together the chief priests, and the Scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast-day, lest there be an uproar among the people.

6 ¶ * Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poore.

10 When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.

11 * For ye have the poore always with you, but me ye have not always.

12 For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial.

13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

14 ¶ * Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests,

15 And said unto them, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? and they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

17 ¶ * Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passeover?

18 And he said, Go into the citie to such a man, and say unto him, The master saith, My time is at hand, I will keep the passeover at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them, and they made ready the passeover.

20 * Now when the even was come, he sat down with the twelve.

21 And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowfull, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

23 And he answered and said, * He that dippeth his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

24 The Sonne of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had been good for that man, if he had not been born.

25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered, and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

26 ¶ And as they were eating, * Jesus took bread, and ‖ blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat, this is my bodie.

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it:

28 For this is my blood of the new testament which is shed for many for the remission of sinnes.

29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, untill that day when I drink it new with you in my Fathers kingdome.

30 And when they had sung an ‖ hymne they went out into the mount of Olives.

31 Then saith Jesus unto them, * All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, * I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

32 But after I am risen again, * I will go before you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered and said unto him, Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

753

*Deut. 15. 11.

*Mar. 14. 10. Luke 22. 3.

*Mar. 14. 12. Luke 22. 7.

*Mar. 14. 18. Luke 22. 14. John 13. 21.

*Psal. 41. 9.

*1. Cor. 11. 23, 24. ‖ *Many Greek copies have*, gave thanks.

‖ *Or*, psalme.

*Mar. 14. 27. John 16. 32. *Zech. 13. 7.

*Mar. 14. 28. and 16. 7.

* Mar. 14. 1. Luke 22. 1. John 13. 1. *Joh. 11. 47.

* Mar. 14. 3. John 11. 1.

254

34 Jesus said unto him, * Verily I say unto thee, that this night before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee: likewise also said all the disciples.

36 ¶ * Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray yonder.

37 And he took with him, Peter, and the two sonnes of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowfull, and very heavy.

38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowfull, even unto death: tarry ye here and watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one houre?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

42 He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not passe away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest, behold, the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

47 ¶ And * while he yet spake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests and elders of the people.

48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a signe, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail Master, and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Jesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and stroke a servant of the high priests, and smote off his eare.

52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: * for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more then twelve legions of angels?

54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, * that thus it must be?

55 In that same houre said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the * scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

57 ¶ * And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the Scribes and the elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him afarre off, unto the high priests palace, and went in, and sat with the servants to see the end.

59 Now the chief priests and elders, and all the counsel sought false witnesse against Jesus to put him to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses,

61 And said, This fellow said, * I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three dayes.

62 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? What is it, which these witnesse against thee?

63 But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ the Sonne of God.

64 Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, * Hereafter shall ye see the Sonne of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy, what further need have we of witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

66 What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

67 * Then did they spit in his face, and buffetted him, and others smote him with ‖ the palms of their hands,

68 Saying, Prophesie unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 ¶ * Now Peter sat without in the palace: and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This fellow was also with Jesus of Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse and to swear, saying, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembred the words of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Christ is delivered bound to Pilate. 3 Judas hangeth himself. 19 Pilate admonished of his wife, 24 washeth his hands, 26 and looseth Barabbas. 29 Christ is crowned with thorns, 34 crucified, 40 reviled, 50 dieth, and is buried. 66 His sepulchre is sealed and watched.

WHen the morning was come, * all the chief priests and elders of the people, took counsel against Jesus to put him to death.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governour.

3 ¶ Then Judas which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself,

*John 13.38

*Mar. 14.32 Luke 22.39

*Mar. 14.43. Luke 22.47. John 18.3.

*Gen. 9.6. Revel. 13.10

*Isa. 53.10.

*Lamen. 4.20

*Mar. 14.53 Luke 22.54. John 18.13.

*John 2.19.

*Chap. 16. 27. Rom. 14.10. 1 Thess. 4.16

*Isa. 50.6. ‖ Or, rods.

*Mar. 14.66 Luke 22.56. John 18.25.

*Mar. 15.1. Luke 22.66 John 18.28.

himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

4 Saying, I have sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that.

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, * and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawfull for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they took counsel, and bought with them the potters field, to bury strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called, * The field of blood unto this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, * And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, ‖ whom they of the children of Israel did value:

10 And gave them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me)

11 And Jesus stood before the governour: and the governour asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And he answered him to never a word, insomuch that the governour marvelled greatly.

15 * Now at that feast the governour was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

19 ¶ When he was set down on the judgement seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.

20 * But the chief priests and elders perswaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and destroy Jesus.

21 The governour answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? They all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governour said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 ¶ When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

26 ¶ Then released he Barabbas unto them: and when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered him to be crucified.

27 * Then the souldiers of the governour took Jesus into the ‖ common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of souldiers.

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail king of the Jews.

30 And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

32 * And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his crosse.

33 * And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

34 ¶ They gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, * They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

36 And sitting down, they watched him there:

37 And set up over his head his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

38 Then were there two theeves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes, save thy self: if thou be the Sonne of God, come down from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the chief priests mocking him, with the Scribes and elders, said,

42 He saved others, himself he cannot save: if he be the king of Israel, let him now come down from the crosse, and we will believe him.

43 * He trusted in God, let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he said, I am the Sonne of God.

44 The theeves also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixth houre there was darknesse over all the land unto the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lamasabachthani, that is to say, * My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a spunge, * and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink.

49 The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

50 ¶ Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost.

51 And behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent,

52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of saints which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

54 Now

*Acts 1.18.

*Acts 1.19.

*Zech.11.13.

‖Or, whom they bought of the children of Israel.

*Luke 23.17

*John 18.40. Acts 3.14.

*John 19.1.

‖Or, governours house.

*John 19.9.

*Psal.22.18.

*Psal.22.8. Wisd.2.16, 17, 18.

*Psal. 22. 1.

*Psal.69.21.

116

14 And if this come to the governour's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, ¶ All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

19 ¶* Go ye therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost:

20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway even unto the end of the world. Amen.

14 And if this come to the governour's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, ¶ All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

19 ¶* Go ye therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost:

20 Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway even unto the end of the world. Amen.

The

The gospel according to S. MARK.

CHAP. I.

1 *The office of John the Baptist.* 9 *Jesus is baptized,* 12 *tempted:* 14 *he preacheth:* 16 *calleth Peter, Andrew, James and John:* 23 *healeth one that had a devil,* 29 *Peters mother in law,* 32 *many diseased persons:* 41 *and cleanseth the leper.*

THe beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ the Sonne of God,

2 As it is written in the prophets, *Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

3 * The voice of one crying in the wildernesse, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 * John did baptize in the wilderneſſe, and preach the baptisme of repentance, ‖ for the remission of sinnes.

5 * And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sinnes.

6 And John was * clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loyns: and he did eat locusts and wilde hony:

7 And preached, saying, There cometh one mightier then I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoup down and unloose.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 * And it came to passe in those dayes, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens ‖ opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him.

11 And there came a voice from heaven, saying, Thou art my beloved Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

12 * And immediately the spirit driveth him into the wilderneſſe.

13 And he was there in the wilderneſſe fourty dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wilde beasts, and the angels ministred unto him.

14 Now after that John was put in prison, * Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdome of God,

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of God is at hand: repent ye and beleeve the gospel.

16 * Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: (for they were fishers)

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the sonne of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

21 * And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the sabbath-day he entred into the synagogue, and taught.

22 * And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the Scribes.

23 * And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out,

24 Saying, Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.

25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

29 * And forthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon, and Andrew, with James and John.

30 But Simons wives mother lay sick of a fever: and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and took her by the hand and lift her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she ministred unto them.

32 And at even, when the sunne did set, they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils.

33 And all the city was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils ‖ to speak, because they knew him.

35 And in the morning rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee.

38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

40 * And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

41 And Jesus moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will, be thou clean.

42 And assoon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleansed.

43 And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away;

44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things

* Mal. 3. 1.
* Isa. 40. 3. Luke 3. 4. John 1. 23.
* Matt. 3. 1.
‖ Or, unto.
* Matt. 3. 5.
* Matt. 3. 4.
* Matt. 3. 13.
‖ Or, cloven, or rent.
* Matt. 4. 1.
* Matt. 4. 12.
* Matt. 4. 18.
* Matt. 4. 13.
* Matt. 7. 28.
* Luke 4. 33.
* Matt. 8. 14.
‖ Or, to say that they knew him.
* Matt. 8. 2.

758

which Moses commanded for a testimony unto them.

45 * But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

* Luke 5.15.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ healeth one sick of the palsie, 14 calleth Matthew from the receipt of custome, 15 eateth with Publicanes and sinners, 18 excuseth his disciples for not fasting, 23 and for plucking the eares of corn on the sabbath-day.

AND again * he entred into Capernaum, after some dayes, and it was noised that he was in the house.

* Matt. 9.1.

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no not so much as about the doore: and he preached the word unto them.

3 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsie, which was born of foure.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for preasse, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsie lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes be forgiven thee.

6 But there were certain of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? * who can forgive sinnes but God only?

* Job 14.4. Isa. 43.25.

8 And immediately, when Jesus perceived in his spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsie, Thy sinnes be forgiven thee: or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed and walk?

10 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgive sinnes, (he saith to the sick of the palsie)

11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.

12 And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

13 And he went forth again by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

14 * And as he passed by, he saw Levi the sonne of Alpheus sitting || at the receipt of custome, and said unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

*Matt. 9 9. || Or, at the place where the custome was received.

15 And it came to passe, that as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with Publicanes and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole, have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

* Matt. 9.14. Luke 5.33.

18 * And the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees used to fast; and they come, and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 No man also seweth a piece of || new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up, taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse.

|| Or, raw

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles, else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.

23 * And it came to passe, that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath-day, and his disciples began as they went, to pluck the eares of corn.

* Matt.

24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath-day that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?

26 How he went into the house of God in the dayes of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawfull to eat, but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:

28 Therefore the Sonne of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ healeth the withered hand, 10 and many other infirmities: 11 rebuketh the unclean spirits: 13 chooseth his twelve apostles: 22 convinceth the blasphemy of casting out devils by Beelzebub: 31 and sheweth who are his brother, sister, and mother.

AND * he entred again into the synagogue, and there was a man there which had a withered hand.

* Matt.

2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath-day, that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawfull to do good on the sabbath-dayes, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? but they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the || hardnesse of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

|| Or, blindnesse.

6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea,

8 And from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For

10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they ‖ preassed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

‖ Or, rushed.

11 And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And he straitly charged them, that they should not make him known.

13 * And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him.

* Matt. 10. 1.

14 And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach:

15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils.

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And James the sonne of Zebedee, and John the brother of James (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sonnes of thunder)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the sonne of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went ‖ into an house.

‖ Or, home.

20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.

21 And when his ‖ friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him, for they said, He is beside himself.

‖ Or, kinsmen

22 ¶ And the Scribes which came down from Jerusalem, said, * He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils.

* Matt. 9. 34.

23 And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdome be divided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand.

25 And if a house be divided against it selfe, that house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he will first binde the strong man, and then he will spoil his house.

28 * Verily I say unto you, All sinnes shall be forgiven unto the sonnes of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme:

* Matt. 12. 31

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath never forgivenesse, but is in danger of eternall damnation:

30 Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

31 ¶ * There came then his brethren and his mother, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

* Matt. 12. 46

32 And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *The parable of the sower, 14 and the meaning thereof.* 21 *We must communicate the light of our knowledge to others.* 26 *The parable of the seed growing secretly,* 30 *and of the mustard-seed.* 35 *Christ stilleth the tempest on the sea.*

* Matt. 13. 1.

AND * he began again to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea, on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken, Behold, there went out a sower to sow:

4 And it came to passe as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowls of the aire came, and devoured it up.

5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth, and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the sunne was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yeelded no fruit.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeeld fruit that sprang up and increased, and brought forth some thirty, and some sixtie, and some an hundred.

9 And he said unto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve, asked of him the parable.

11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mysterie of the kingdome of God; but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

12 * That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may heare, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and their sinnes should be forgiven them.

* Matt. 13. 14

13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will you know all parables?

14 ¶ The sower soweth the word.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sowen, but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sowen in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sowen on stony ground, who when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladnesse:

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the words sake, immediately they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sowen among thorns: such as heare the word,

* 1. Tim. 6. 17

19 And the cares of this world, * and the deceitfulnesse of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitfull.

20 And these are they which are sowen on good ground, such as heare the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty fold, some sixtie, and some an hundred.

* Matt. 5. 15. ‖ The word in the originall signifieth a lesse measure, as Matt. 5. 15

21 ¶ * And he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a ‖ bushel, or under a bed, and not to be set on a candlestick?

* Matt. 10. 26

22 * For there is nothing hid which shall not be manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

* Matt. 7. 2.

23 If any man have eares to heare, let him heare.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what you heare: * with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that heare shall more be given.

* Matt. 13. 12

25 * For he that hath, to him shall be given: and

760 and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

26 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground,

27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of her self, first the blade, then the eare, after that the full corn in the eare.

‖ Or, ripe. 29 But when the fruit is ‖ brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

*Matt. 13. 31. 30 ¶ And he said, * Whereunto shall we liken the kingdome of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is like a grain of mustard-seed; which when it is sowen in the earth, is lesse then all the seeds that be in the earth.

32 But when it is sowen it groweth up, and becometh greater then all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, so that the fowls of the aire may lodge under the shadow of it.

*Matt. 13. 34 33 * And with many such parables spake he the word unto them as they were able to heare it.

34 But without a parable spake he not unto them: and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

*Matt. 8. 23. 35 * And the same day when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us passe over unto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship; and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And there arose a great storm of winde, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship, asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the winde, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still: and the winde ceased, and there was a great calme.

40 And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearfull? how is it that you have no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the winde and the sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

1 Christ delivering the possessed of the legion of devils; 13 they enter into the swine: 25 He healeth the woman of the bloudy issue, 35 and raiseth from death Jairus his daughter.

*Matt. 8. 28. AND * they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes.

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombes, a man with an unclean spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombes, and no man could binde him, no not with chains:

4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombes, crying, and cutting himself with stones.

6 But when he saw Jesus afarre off, he came and worshipped him,

7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Sonne of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is legion: for we are many.

10 And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding.

12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entred into the swine, and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right minde, and they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devil, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvell.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, much people gathered unto him, and he was nigh unto the sea.

* Matt. 9. 18. 22 * And behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name, and when he saw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee come and lay thy hands on her that she may be healed, and she shall live.

24 And Jesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an issue of blood twelve yeares,

26 And had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in the presse behinde, and touched his garment:

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus immediately knowing in himself, that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the presse, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing

knowing what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole, go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogues house, certain which said, Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further?

36 Assoon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorn: but when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying.

41 And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi, which is being interpreted, Damsel (I say unto thee) arise.

42 And straightway the damsel arose, and walked, for she was of the age of twelve yeares: and they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly, that no man should know it: and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ is contemned of his countreymen. 7 He giveth the twelve power over unclean spirits. 14 Divers opinions of Christ. 18 John Baptist is beheaded, 29 and buried. 30 The apostles return from preaching. 34 The miracle of five loaves and two fishes. 48 Christ walketh on the sea: 53 and healeth all that touch him.

*Matt.13.54 AND * he went out from thence, and came into his own countrey, and his disciples follow him.

2 And when the sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdome is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the sonne of Marie, the brother of James and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

*John 4. 44. 4 But Jesus said unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, but in his own countrey, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

*Matt.9.35. Luke 13.22. 5 And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.

*Matt.10.1. 6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. * And he went round about the villages, teaching.

7 ¶ And he calleth unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by two and two, and gave them power over unclean spirits,

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only: no scrip, no bread, no ‖ money in their purse:

‖ The word signifieth a piece of brasse money, in value somewhat lesse then a farthing, Matt.10.9. but here it is taken in generall for money.

9 But be shod with sandals: and not put on two coats.

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 * And whosoever shall not receive you nor heare you, when ye depart thence, * shake off the dust under your feet, for a testimony against them: verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement, then for that city.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many devils, * and anointed with oyl many that were sick, and healed them.

14 * And king Herod heard of him, (for his name was spread abroad) and he said that John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

15 Others said that it is Elias. And others said that it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 * But when Herod heard thereof, he said, It is John whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife; for he had married her.

18 For John had said unto Herod, * It is not lawfull for thee to have thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had ‖ a quarrell against him, and would have killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and ‖ observed him, and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birth-day made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

23 And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdome.

24 And she went forth, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sorry; yet for his oaths sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

‖ Or, one of his guard. 27 And immediately the king sent ‖ an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought, and he went, and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel, and the damsel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and took up his corps, and laid it in a tombe.

*Luke 9.10. 30 * And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

32 * And

761

*Matt.10.14. *Acts 13.51.

*James 5.14.

*Matt.14.1.

*Luke 3.19.

*Levit.18. 16.

‖ Or, an inward grudge

‖ Or, kept him, or, saved him.

762

32 * And they departed into a desert place by ship privately.

* Matt.14.13

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran a foot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

34 * And Jesus, when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

*Matt.9.36.

35 * And when the day was now farre spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is farre passed,

*Matt.14.15

36 Send them away, that they may go into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

37 He answered and said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred ‖ penie-worth of bread, and give them to eat?

‖ The Romane peny is seven-pence half-peny, as Matt.18.28.

38 He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. And when they knew, they say, Five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grasse.

40 And they sat down in ranks by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before ‖ unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

‖ Or, over against Bethsaida.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

*Matt.14.23

48 * And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toyling in rowing: (for the winde was contrary unto them) and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheere, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondred.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was hardened.

*Matt.14.34

53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway they knew him,

55 And ran through that whole region round about, and began to carrie about in beds, those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched ‖ him, were made whole.

Or, it.

CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees finde fault at the disciples, for eating with unwashen hands. 8 They break the commandment of God by the traditions of men. 14 Meat defileth not the man. 24 He healeth the Syrophenician womans daughter of an unclean spirit, 31 and one that was deaf and stammered in his speech.

THen * came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the Scribes, which came from Jerusalem.

* Matt.15.1.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with ‖ defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault.

‖ Or, common.

3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands ‖ oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

‖ Or, diligently: in the Original, with the fist: Theophylact, up to the elbow.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups and ‖ pots, brasen vessels, and of ‖ tables.

‖ Sextarius is about a pinte and an half. ‖ Or, beds.

5 Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is farre from me.

* Isa.29.13. Matt.15.8.

7 Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye ‖ reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

‖ Or, frustrate

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is * Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me: he shall be free.

*Matt.15.5.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother:

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

*Matt.15.10

14 ¶ * And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entring into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have eares to heare, let him heare.

17 And when he was entred into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entreth into the man, it cannot defile him;

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And

20 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 * For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, covetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, lasciviousnesse, an evil eye, blasphemie, pride, foolishnesse:

23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ * And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entred into an house, and would have no man know it; but he could not be hid.

25 For a certain woman whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

26 (The woman was a ‖ Greek, a Syrophenician by nation) and she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

28 And she answered and said unto him, Yes Lord, yet the dogs under the table eat of the childrens crummes.

29 And he said unto her, For this saying, go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

31 ¶ And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his eares, and he spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it,

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to heare, and the dumbe to speak.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ feedeth the people miraculously: 10 refuseth to give a signe to the Pharisees: 14 admonisheth his disciples to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod: 22 giveth a blinde man his sight: 27 acknowledgeth that he is the Christ, who should suffer and rise again: 34 and exhorteth to patience in persecution for the profession of the gospel.

IN those dayes * the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and saith unto them,

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three dayes, and have nothing to eat:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from farre.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wildernesse?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about foure thousand; and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 * And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a signe? verily I say unto you, There shall no signe be given to this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ship again, departed to the other side.

14 ¶ * Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more then one loaf.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is * because we have no bread.

17 And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? perceive ye not yet, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes, see ye not? and having eares, heare ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.

20 And when the seven among foure thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven.

21 And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethsaida, and they bring a blinde man unto him, and besought him to touch him.

23 And he took the blinde man by the hand, and led him out of the town, and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought.

24 And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that, he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the town.

27 ¶ * And Jesus went out, and his disciples into the towns of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Whom do men say that I am?

28 And they answered, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias; and others, One of the prophets.

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them that they should tell no man of him.

31 And

*Gen. 6. 5. and 8. 21. Matt. 15. 19.

*Matt. 15. 21

‖ Or, Gentile.

*Matt. 15. 32

*Matt. 16. 1.

*Matt. 16. 5.

*Matt. 16. 7.

*Matt. 16. 13.

764

31 And he began to teach them, that the Sonne of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chiefe priests, and Scribes, and be killed, and after three dayes rise again.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him, with his disciples also, he said unto them, *Matt.10.38 * Whosoever will come after me, let him denie himself, and take up his crosse, and follow me.

35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it, but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospels, the same shall save it.

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

*Matt.10.33 38 * Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him also shall the Sonne of man be ashamed when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels.

CHAP. IX.

2 Jesus is transfigured. 11 He instructeth his disciples concerning the coming of Elias: 14 casteth forth a dumbe and deaf spirit: 30 foretelleth his death and resurrection: 33 exhorteth his disciples to humility: 38 bidding them not to prohibit such as be not against them, nor to give offence to any of the faithfull.

*Matt.16.28 AND he said unto them, * Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdome of God come with power.

*Matt.17.1. 2 ¶ * And after six dayes, Jesus taketh with him, Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow: so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias, with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here, and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Sonne: heare him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus onely with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Sonne of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes that Elias must first come?

*Isa.53.3, 4, &c. 12 And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things, and * how it is written of the Sonne of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

13 But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

*Matt.17.14 14 ¶ * And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes questioning with them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the Scribes, What question ye ‖ with them?

[Or, among your selves.

17 And one of the multitude answered and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my sonne, which hath a dumbe spirit:

‖Or, dasheth him.

18 And wheresoever he taketh him, he teareth him; and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 He answered him, and saith, O faithlesse generation, how long shall I be with you, how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a childe.

22 And oft times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst beleeve, all things are possible to him that beleeveth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I beleeve, help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumbe and deaf spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing but by prayer and fasting.

*Matt.17.22 30 ¶ * And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee, and he would not that any man should know it.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, The Sonne of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

*Matt.18.1. 33 ¶ * And he came to Capernaum, and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your selves, by the way?

34 But they held their peace; for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who should be the greatest.

35 And he sat down and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a childe, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive

receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶ * And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us, and we forbad him, because he followeth not us.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not, * for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

41 * For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

42 * And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him, that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

43 * And if thy hand ‖ offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then having two hands, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

44 * Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, then having two feet, to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye ‖ offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdome of God with one eye, then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire:

48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire, * and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

50 * Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltnesse, wherewith will you season it? Have salt in your selves, and have peace one with another.

CHAP. X.

2 Christ disputeth with the Pharisees touching divorcement: 13 blesseth the children that are brought unto him: 17 resolveth a rich man how he may inherit life everlasting: 23 telleth his disciples of the danger of riches: 28 promiseth rewards to them that forsake any thing for the gospel: 32 foretelleth his death and resurrection: 35 biddeth the two ambitious suiters to think rather of suffering with him: 46 and restoreth to Bartimeus his sight.

AND * he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardnesse of your heart, he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife,

8 And they twain shall be one flesh: so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath joyned together, let not man put asunder.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter.

11 And he saith unto them, * Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

13 ¶ * And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdome of God as a little childe, he shall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

17 ¶ * And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternall life?

18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is no man good, but one, that is, God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witnesse, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth.

21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest, go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poore, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come, take up the crosse, and follow me.

22 And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdome of God!

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ * Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily, I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the gospels,

30 But he shall receive an hundred fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternall life.

31 * But many that are first, shall be last; and the last, first.

33 ¶ * And they were in the way going up to Jerusalem: and Jesus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,

33 Saying, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be delivered unto the

*Luke 9. 49.

*1. Cor. 12. 3.

*Matt. 10. 42.

*Matt. 18. 6.

*Matt. 5. 29. and 18. 8.

‖ Or, cause thee to offend.

*Isa. 66. 24.

‖ Or, cause thee to offend.

*Lev. 2. 13.

*Matt. 5. 13.

*Matt. 19. 1.

*Matt. 5. 32. and 19. 9.

*Matt. 19. 13.

*Matt. 19. 16.

*Matt. 19. 27

*Matt. 19. 30.

*Matt. 20. 17.

766

the chiefe priests, and unto the Scribes: and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles:

34 And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise again.

*Matt 20.20. 35 ¶ * And James and John the sonnes of Zebedee come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldst do for us whatsoever we shall desire.

36 And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you?

37 They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

38 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptisme that I am baptized with?

39 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptisme that I am baptized withall, shall ye be baptized:

40 But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

*Luke 22.25 ‖ Or, think good. 42 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, * Ye know that they which ‖ are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:

44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

45 For even the Sonne of man came not to be ministred unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransome for many.

*Matt. 20.29 46 ¶ * And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, & a great number of people, blinde Bartimeus, the sonne of Timeus, sat by the high-way side, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou Sonne of David, have mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cried the more a great deal, Thou Sonne of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blinde man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee? The blinde man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

‖ Or, saved thee. 52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way, thy faith hath ‖ made thee whole: and immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Jerusalem: 12 curseth the fruitlesse leafie tree: 15 purgeth the temple: 20 exhorteth his disciples to stedfastnesse of faith, and to forgive their enemies: 27 and defendeth the lawfulnesse of his actions, by the witnesse of John, who was a man sent of God.

* Matt. 21.1. AND * when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethanie, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the village over against you, and assoon as ye be entred into it, ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye that the Lord hath need of him, and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And certain of them that stood there, said unto them, What do ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sat upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdome of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

11 And Jesus entred into Jerusalem, and into the temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were come from Bethanie, he was hungry.

*Matt. 21.19 13 * And seeing a fig-tree afarre off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might finde any thing thereon: & when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Jesus answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

*Matt. 21.12. 15 ¶ * And they come to Jerusalem, and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves:

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel through the temple.

17 And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of theeves.

18 And the Scribes and chiefe priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

*Matt. 21.19. 20 ¶ * And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig tree dried up from the roots.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst is withered away.

‖ Or, have the faith of God. 22 And Jesus answering saith unto them, ‖ Have faith in God.

23 For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to passe, he shall have whatsoever he saith.

* Matt. 7.7 24 Therefore I say unto you, * What things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

* Matt. 6.14 25 And when ye stand, praying, * forgive, if ye

ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.

26 But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven, forgive your trespasses.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jerusalem. *Matt.21.23 * and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the Scribes, and the elders,

28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authoritie to do these things?

29 And Jesus answered and said unto them, ‖Or, thing. I will also ask of you one ‖ question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

30 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, Why then did ye not beleeve him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered, and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 In a parable of the vineyard let out to unthankfull husbandmen, Christ foretelleth the reprobation of the Jews, and the calling of the Gentiles. 13 He avoideth the snare of the Pharisees and Herodians about paying tribute to Cesar: 18 convinceth the errour of the Sadduces, who denied the resurrection: 28 resolveth the Scribe, who questioned of the first commandment: 35 refuteth the opinion that the Scribes held of Christ: 38 bidding the people to beware of their ambition and hypocrisie: 41 and commendeth the poore widow for her two mites above all.

*Matt.21.33 AND * he began to speak unto them by parables. A certain man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the winefat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey.

2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him and beat him, and sent him away empty.

4 And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And again, he sent another, and him they killed, and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one sonne, his welbeloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my sonne.

7 But those husbandmen said amongst themselves, This is the heir, come let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the lord of the vineyard do? he will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

*Psal.118.22. 10 * And have ye not read this scripture? The stone which the builders rejected is become the head of the corner.

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people, for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

*Mat.22.15. 13 ¶ * And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawfull to give tribute to Cesar, or not?

15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he knowing their hypocrisie, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a ‖ penie, that I may see it. ‖Valuing of our money seven pence halfpenie, as Matt.18.28.

16 And they brought it: and he saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cesars.

17 And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cesar the things that are Cesars, and to God the things that are Gods. And they marvelled at him.

*Matt.22.23 18 ¶ * Then come unto him the Sadduces, which say there is no resurrection, and they asked him, saying,

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a mans brother die, and leave his wife behinde him, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

20 Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and dying, left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed, and the third likewise.

22 And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore erre, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marrie, nor are given in marriage: but are as the angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly erre.

*Matt.22.35 28 ¶ * And one of the Scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?

29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Heare, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord;

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment.

31 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self: there is none other commandment greater then these.

32 And the Scribe said unto him, Well Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more then all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.

34 And

768

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

*Matt 22.41

35 ¶ * And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is the sonne of David?

36 For David himself said by the holy Ghost, The LORD said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy foot-stool.

37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord, and whence is he then his sonne? and the common people heard him gladly.

*Matt. 23.5.

38 ¶ And he said unto them in his doctrine, * Beware of the Scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market-places,

39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts:

†Matt.23.14.

40 * Which devoure widowes houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

*Luke 21.1.

41 ¶ * And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast ‖ money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much.

‖ A piece of brasse money, *See Matt.10.9.*

42 And there came a certain poore widow, and she threw in two ‖ mites, which make a farthing.

‖ It is the seventh part of one piece of that brasse money.

43 And he called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poore widow hath cast more in, then all they which have cast into the treasury.

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Christ foretelleth the destruction of the temple: 9 the persecutions for the gospel: 10 that the gospel must be preached to all nations: 14 that great calamities shall happen to the Jews: 24 and the manner of his coming to judgement. 32 The houre whereof being known to none, every man is to watch and pray, that we be not found unprovided, when he cometh to each one particularly by death.

*Matt 24.1.

AND * as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are here.

2 And Jesus answering said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be throwen down.

*Matt.24.3.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew asked him privately,

4 * Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled?

5 And Jesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you.

6 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceive many.

7 And when ye shall heare of warres, and rumours of warres, be ye not troubled: for such things must needs be, but the end shall not be yet.

‖ The word in the original, importeth the pains of a woman in travail.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of ‖ sorrows.

9 ¶ But take heed to your selves: for they shall deliver you up to councels, and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimonie against them.

10 And the gospel must first be published among all nations.

*Matt.10.19

11 * But when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought before-hand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that houre, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the holy Ghost.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the sonne: and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

*Matt.24.15

14 ¶ * But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not, (let him that readeth, understand) then let them that be in Judea, flee to the mountaines:

15 And let him that is on the house top, not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turn back again for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes.

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter.

19 For in those dayes shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, unto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saved: but for the elects sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the dayes.

*Matt.24.23.

21 * And then, if any man shall say to you, Lo, here is Christ, or lo, he is there: beleeve him not.

22 For false Christs, and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signes and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

23 But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

*Matt.24.29.

24 ¶ * But in those dayes after that tribulation, the sunne shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light.

25 And the starres of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Sonne of man coming in the clouds, with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together his elect from the foure windes, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

28 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree, When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is neare:

29 So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to passe, know that it is nigh, even at the doores.

30 Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heaven and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

32 ¶ But of that day and that houre knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Sonne, but the Father.

Matt.24.42

33 * Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is.

34 For the Sonne of man is as a man taking a farre journey, who left his house, and gave authority

authoritie to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning)

36 Lest coming suddenly, he finde you sleeping.

37 And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 A conspiracie against Christ. 3 Precious ointment is poured on his head by a woman. 10 Judas selleth his master for money. 12 Christ himself foretelleth how he shall be betrayed of one of his disciples: 22 after the passeover prepared, and eaten, instituteth his supper: 26 declareth afore-hand the flight of all his disciples, and Peters denyall. 43 Judas betrayeth him with a kisse. 46 He is apprehended in the garden, 53 falsely accused, and impiously condemned of the Jews councel, 65 shamefully abused by them, 66 and thrice denied of Peter.

AFter * two dayes, was the feast of the passeover, and of unleavened bread: and the chief priests and the Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not on the feast-day, lest there be an uprore of the people.

3 ¶ * And being in Bethanie, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman, having an alabaster box of ointment of ‖ spikenard, very precious, and she brake the box, and poured it on his head.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made?

5 For it might have been sold for more then three hundred ‖ pence, and have been given to the poore: and they murmured against her.

6 And Jesus said, Let her alone, why trouble you her? she hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For ye have the poore with you alwayes, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not alwayes.

8 She hath done what she could: she is come afore-hand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done shall be spoken of, for a memorial of her.

10 ¶ * And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

12 ¶ * And the first day of unleavened bread, when they ‖ killed the passeover, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the passeover?

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passeover with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passeover.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

18 * And as they sat, and did eat, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, one of you which eateth with me, shall betray me.

19 And they began to be sorrowfull, and to say unto him, one by one, Is it I? And another said, Is it I?

20 And he answered and said unto them, It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Sonne of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: good were it for that man, if he had never been born.

22 ¶ * And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my body.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it.

24 And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, untill that day that I drink it new in the kingdome of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an ‖ hymne, they went out into the mount of Olives.

27 * And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

29 * But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.

30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, that this day, even in this night before the cock crow twice, thou shalt denie me thrice.

31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not denie thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 * And they came to a place which was named Gethsemani, and he saith to his disciples, Sit ye here, while I shall pray.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy,

34 And saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowfull unto death: tarrie ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible the houre might passe from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, All things are possible unto thee, take away this cup from me: nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one houre?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.

39 And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the houre is come, behold, the Sonne of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 ¶ * And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and the Scribes, and the elders.

44 And

* Matt. 26. 20.

* Matt. 26. 26.

‖ Or, psalme.

* Matt. 26. 31.

* Matt. 26. 33.

* Matt. 26. 36.

* Matt. 26. 47.

* Matt. 26. 2.

* Matt. 26. 6.

‖ Or, pure nard, or liquid nard.

‖ See Matth. 18. 28.

* Matth. 26. 14.

* Matth. 26. 17.

‖ Or, sacrificed.

770

44 And he that betrayed him, had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, that same is he; take him, and lead him away safely.

45 And assoon as he was come, he goeth straightway to him, and saith, Master, Master, and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his eare.

48 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out as against a thief, with swords and with staves, to take me?

49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not: but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsook him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body, and the young men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

* Matth. 26. 57. 53 ¶ * And they led Jesus away to the high priest, and with him were assembled all the chief priests and the elders, and the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him afarre off, even into the palace of the high priest: and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

* Matth. 26. 59. 55 * And the chief priests, and all the councel sought for witnesse against Jesus to put him to death, and found none.

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but their witnesse agreed not together.

57 And there arose certain, and bare false witnesse against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their witnesse agree together.

60 And the high priest stood up in the mids, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witnesse against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Sonne of the blessed?

* Matt. 24. 30. 62 And Jesus said, I am: * and ye shall see the Sonne of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

63 Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses?

64 Ye have heard the blasphemie: what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guiltie of death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesie: and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands.

* Matth. 26. 69. 66 ¶ * And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the high priest.

67 And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch, and the cock crew.

69 And a maid saw him again, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.

71 But he began to curse and to swear, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speak.

* Matth. 26. 75. 72 * And the second time the cock crew: and Peter called to minde the word that Jesus said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt denie me thrice. And ‖ when he thought thereon, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

1 Jesus brought bound and accused before Pilate. 15 Upon the clamour of the common people, the murderer Barabbas is loosed, and Jesus delivered up to be crucified. 17 He is crowned with thorns, 19 spit on, and mocked: 21 fainteth in bearing his crosse: 27 hangeth between two theeves: 29 suffereth the triumphing reproches of the Jews: 39 but confessed by the centurion to be the Sonne of God: 43 and is honourably buried by Joseph.

AND * straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and Scribes, and the whole councel, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

* Matth. 27.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answering said unto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing.

* Matth. 27. 13. 4 * And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witnesse against thee.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothing; so that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the king of the Jews?

10 (For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envie)

11 But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate answered and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call the king of the Jews?

13 And they cried out again, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said unto them, Why? what evil hath he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the souldiers led him away into the hall, called Prætorium, and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head,

18 And began to salute him, Hail king of the Jews.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

21 * And they compell one Simon a Cyre-

nian,

nian, who passed by, coming out of the countrey, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his crosse.

22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a scull.

23 And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrhe: but he received it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third houre, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE IEWS.

27 And with him they crucifie two theeves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, * And he was numbred with the transgressours.

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three dayes,

30 Save thy self, and come down from the crosse.

31 Likewise also the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the Scribes, He saved others, himself he cannot save.

32 Let Christ the king of Israel descend now from the crosse, that we may see and beleeve: and they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

33 And when the sixth houre was come, there was darkenesse over the whole land, untill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, * Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a spunge full of vineger, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone, let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.

38 And the vail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottome.

39 ¶ And when the centurion which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truely this man was the Sonne of God.

40 There were also women looking on afarre off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the lesse, and of Joses, and Salome;

41 Who also when he was in Galilee, * followed him, and ministred unto him, and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

42 ¶ * And now when the even was come, (because it was the preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath)

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counseller, which also waited for the kingdome of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead, and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewen out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the doore of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses, beheld where he was laid.

CHAP. XVI.

1 An angel declareth the resurrection of Christ to three women. 9 Christ himself appeareth to Mary Magdalene: 12 to two going into the countrey: 14 then to the apostles, 15 whom he sendeth forth to preach the gospel: 19 and ascendeth into heaven.

AND when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 * And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the sunne.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

5 * And entring into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, * as he said unto you.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed, neither said they any thing to any man: for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when Jesus was risen early, the first day of the week, * he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, * out of whom he had cast seven devils.

10 And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, beleeved not.

12 ¶ After that, he appeared in another form * unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the countrey.

13 And they went and told it unto the residue: neither beleeved they them.

14 ¶ * Afterward he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat || at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardnesse of heart, because they beleeved not them which had seen him after he was risen.

15 * And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

16 He that beleeveth and is baptized, shall be saved; * but he that beleeveth not, shall be damned.

17 And these signes shall follow them that beleeve; * In my name shall they cast out devils, * they shall speak with new tongues,

18 * They shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing it shall not hurt them, * they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was * received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, * and confirming the word with signes following. Amen.

* Isa. 53. 12.
* Matth. 27. 46.
* Luke 8. 3.
* Matth. 27. 57.
771
* Luke 24. 1. John 20. 1.
* John 20. 11
* Matth. 26. 32.
* John 20. 14
* Luke 8. 2.
* Luke 24. 13.
* Luke 24. 36. John 20. 19.
|| Or, together.
* Matth. 28. 19.
* John 12. 48
* Acts 16. 18
* Acts 2. 4.
* Acts 28. 5.
* Acts 28. 8.
* Luke 24. 51
* Heb. 2. 4.

CHAP. I.

1 *The preface of Luke to his whole gospel.* 5 *The conception of John the Baptist,* 26 *and of Christ.* 39 *The prophesie of Elisabeth, and of Mary, concerning Christ.* 57 *The nativity and circumcision of John.* 67 *The prophesie of Zachary, both of Christ,* 76 *and of John.*

FOrasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely beleeved among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

5 ¶ THere was in the dayes of Herod the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blameless.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in yeares.

8 And it came to passe, that while he executed the priests office before God in the order of his course,

9 According to the custome of the priests office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord.

10 * And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name John.

14 And thou shalt have joy and gladnesse, and many shall rejoyce at his birth.

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink, and he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, even from his mothers wombe.

16 * And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God.

17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient || to the wisdome of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in yeares.

19 And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God: and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumbe, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou beleevest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckned unto them, and remained speechlesse.

23 And it came to passe that assoon as the dayes of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

24 And after those dayes his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid her self five moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the dayes wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproch among men.

26 And in the sixth moneth, the angel Gabriel was sent from God, unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgins name was Mary.

28 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail thou that art || highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her minde what manner of salutation this should be.

30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.

31 * And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy wombe, and bring forth a sonne, and shalt call his name Jesus.

32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Sonne of the Highest, and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David.

33 * And he shall reigne over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdome there shall be no end.

34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel answered and said unto her, The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Sonne of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a sonne in her old age, and this is the sixth moneth with her, who was called barren.

37 For with God nothing shall be unpossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word: and the angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the hill-countrey with haste, into a citie of Juda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.

41 And it came to passe that when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her wombe: and Elisabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy wombe.

43 And

* Exod. 30. 7 Lev. 16. 17.

* Mal. 4. 6.

|| *Or*, by.

|| *Or*, graciously accepted, *or* much graced. *See verse* 30.

* Isa. 7. 14. Matth. 1. 21.

* Dan. 7. 14. Mic. 4. 7.

43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?
44 For lo, assoon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe leaped in my wombe for joy.
45 And blessed is she ‖ that beleeved: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.
46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnifie the Lord,
47 And my spirit hath rejoyced in God my Saviour.
48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.
49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things, and holy is his name.
50 And his mercy is on them that fear him, from generation to generation.
51 * He hath shewed strength with his arm, * he hath scattered the proud, in the imagination of their hearts.
52 * He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.
53 * He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away.
54 He hath holpen his servant Israel, * in remembrance of his mercy,
55 * As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed for ever.
56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths, and returned to her own house.
57 Now Elisabeths full time came, that she should be delivered, and she brought forth a sonne.
58 And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her, and they rejoyced with her.
59 And it came to passe that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the childe, and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.
60 And his mother answered and said, Not so, but he shall be called John.
61 And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name.
62 And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called.
63 And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John: and they marvelled all.
64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.
65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about them, and all these ‖ sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill country of Judea.
66 And all they that had heard them, laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of childe shall this be? and the hand of the Lord was with him.
67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,
68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people,
69 And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David;
70 * As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began.
71 That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us.
72 To perform the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant;
73 * The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,
74 That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear,
75 In holinesse and righteousnesse before him, all the dayes of our life.
76 And thou childe shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his wayes;
77 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people, ‖ by the remission of their sinnes,
78 Through the ‖ tender mercy of our God; whereby the ‖ day-spring from on high hath visited us,
79 To give light to them that sit in darknesse, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.
80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

CHAP. II.

1 *Augustus taxeth all the Romane empire.* 6 *The nativity of Christ.* 8 *One angel relateth it to the shepherds.* 13 *Many sing praises to God for it.* 21 *Christ is circumcised.* 22 *Mary purified.* 28 *Simeon and Anna prophesie of Christ:* 40 *who increaseth in wisedome,* 46 *questioneth in the temple with the doctours,* 51 *and is obedient to his parents.*

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be ‖ taxed.
2 (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governour of Syria)
3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.
4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto * the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and lineage of David)
5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with childe.
6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that she should be delivered.
7 And she brought forth her first-born sonne, and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inne.
8 And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping ‖ watch over their flock by night.
9 And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid.
10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people.
11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.
12 And this shall be a signe unto you; Ye shall finde the babe wrapped in swadling clothes lying in a manger.
13 And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,
14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.
15 And it came to passe, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to passe, which the Lord hath made known unto us.
16 And they came with haste, and found

‖ Or, which beleeved that there.
* Isa. 51. 9. * Psal. 33. 10
* 1. Sam. 2. 6.
* Psal. 34. 10
* Jer. 31. 3, 20.
* Gen. 17. 19. Psal. 132. 11.
‖ Or, things.
* Psal. 132. 17. * Jer. 23. 6. and 30. 10.
* Gen. 22. 16.
‖ Or, for. ‖ Or, bowels of the mercy. ‖ Or, springing, or branch. Num. 24. 17. Isa. 11. 1. Zech. 3. 8. Mal. 4. 2.
‖ Or, enrolled
* John 7. 42.
‖ Or, the night-watches.

774

Mary and Joſeph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had ſeen it, they made known abroad the ſaying which was told them concerning this childe.

18 And all they that heard it, wondered at thoſe things which were told them by the ſhepherds.

19 But Mary kept all theſe things, and pondered them in her heart.

20 And the ſhepherds returned, glorifying and praiſing God for all the things that they had heard and ſeen, as it was told unto them.

* Gen. 17. 12. * Matt. 1. 21. 21 * And when eight dayes were accompliſhed for the circumciſing of the childe, his name was called * IESUS, which was ſo named of the angel before he was conceived in the wombe.

22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the law of Moſes, were accompliſhed, they brought him to Jeruſalem, to preſent him to the Lord,

* Exod. 13. 2. Num. 18. 15. * Lev. 12. 2, 6 23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, * Every male that openeth the wombe ſhall be called holy to the Lord)

24 And to offer a ſacrifice according to * that which is ſaid in the law of the Lord, A paire of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Jeruſalem, whoſe name was Simeon, and the ſame man was juſt and devout, waiting for the conſolation of Iſrael: and the holy Ghoſt was upon him.

26 And it was revealed unto him by the holy Ghoſt, that he ſhould not ſee death, before he had ſeen the Lords Chriſt.

27 And he came by the ſpirit into the temple, and when the parents brought in the childe Jeſus, to do for him after the cuſtome of the law,

28 Then took he him up in his armes, and bleſſed God, and ſaid,

29 Lord now letteſt thou thy ſervant depart in peace, according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes have ſeen thy ſalvation:

31 Which thou haſt prepared before the face of all people:

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Iſrael.

33 And Joſeph and his mother marvelled at thoſe things which were ſpoken of him.

34 And Simeon bleſſed them, and ſaid unto Mary his mother, Behold, this childe is ſet for the * fall and riſing again of many in Iſrael: and for a ſigne which ſhall be ſpoken againſt:

* Iſa. 8. 14. Rom. 9. 32. 35 (Yea, a ſword ſhall pierce through thy own ſoul alſo) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

36 And there was one Anna a prophetеſſe, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aſer; ſhe was of a great age, and had lived with an husband ſeven yeares from her virginitie:

37 And ſhe was a widow of about foureſcore and foure yeares: which departed not from the temple, but ſerved God with faſtings and prayers night and day.

38 And ſhe coming in that inſtant, gave thanks likewiſe unto the Lord, and ſpake of him to all them that looked for redemption in ‖ Jeruſalem. ‖ Or, Iſrael.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own citie Nazareth.

40 And the childe grew, and waxed ſtrong in ſpirit, filled with wiſdome, and the grace of God was upon him.

* Deut. 16. 1. 41 Now his parents went to Jeruſalem * every yeare at the feaſt of the paſſeover.

42 And when he was twelve yeare old, they went up to Jeruſalem, after the cuſtome of the feaſt.

43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as they returned, the childe Jeſus tarried behinde in Jeruſalem, and Joſeph and his mother knew not of it.

44 But they ſuppoſing him to have been in the company, went a dayes journey, and they ſought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jeruſalem, ſeeking him.

46 And it came to paſſe, that after three dayes they found him in the temple, ſitting in the midſt of the doctours, both hearing them, and asking them queſtions.

47 And all that heard him were aſtonished at his underſtanding and anſwers.

48 And when they ſaw him, they were amazed: and his mother ſaid unto him, Sonne, why haſt thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have ſought thee ſorrowing.

49 And he ſaid unto them, How is it that ye ſought me? wiſt ye not that I muſt be about my Fathers buſineſſe?

50 And they underſtood not the ſaying which he ſpake unto them.

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was ſubject unto them: but his mother kept all theſe ſayings in her heart.

52 And Jeſus increaſed in wiſdome and ‖ ſtature, and in favour with God and man. ‖ Or, age.

CHAP. III.

1 The preaching and baptiſme of John: 15 His teſtimony of Chriſt. 20 Herod impriſoneth John. 21 Chriſt baptized, receiveth teſtimony from heaven. 23 The age and genealogie of Chriſt from Joſeph upwards.

NOw in the fifteenth yeare of the reigne of Tiberius Ceſar, Pontius Pilate being governour of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lyſanias the tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high prieſts, the word of God came unto John the ſonne of Zacharias in the wilderneſſe.

* Matth. 3. 1. 3 * And he came into all the countrey about Jordan, preaching the baptiſme of repentance, for the remiſſion of ſinnes,

* Iſa. 40. 3. 4 As it is written in the book of the words of Eſaias the prophet, ſaying, * The voice of one crying in the wilderneſſe, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths ſtraight.

5 Every valley ſhall be filled, and every mountain and hill ſhall be brought low, and the crooked ſhall be made ſtraight, and the rough wayes ſhall be made ſmooth,

6 And all fleſh ſhall ſee the ſalvation of God.

* Matth. 3. 7. 7 Then ſaid he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

‖ Or, meet for. 8 Bring forth therefore fruits ‖ worthy of repentance, and begin not to ſay within your ſelves, We have Abraham to our father: for I ſay unto you, that God is able of theſe ſtones to raiſe up children unto Abraham.

9 And now alſo the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen down, and caſt into the fire.

10 And

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

* James 2. 15. 1. John 3. 17.

11 He answereth and saith unto them, * He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

12 Then came also publicanes to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

13 And he said unto them, Exact no more then that which is appointed you.

14 And the souldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, ‖ Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your ‖ wages.

‖ Or, put no man in fear. ‖ Or, allowance.

15 And as the people were ‖ in expectation, and all men ‖ mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not:

‖ Or, in suspense. ‖ Or, reasoned, or debated.

16 John answered, saying unto them all, * I indeed baptize you with water, but one mightier then I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose; he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire:

* Matth. 3. 11.

17 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floore, and will gather the wheat into his garner, but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

* Matt. 14. 3.

19 * But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

20 Added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

* Matt. 3. 13.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, * it came to passe that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Sonne, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus himself began to be about thirty yeares of age, being (as was supposed) the sonne of Joseph, which was the sonne of Heli,

24 Which was the sonne of Matthat, which was the sonne of Levi, which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Janna, which was the sonne of Joseph,

25 Which was the sonne of Mattathias, which was the sonne of Amos, which was the sonne of Naum, which was the sonne of Esli, which was the sonne of Nagge,

26 Which was the sonne of Maath, which was the sonne of Mattathias, which was the sonne of Semei, which was the sonne of Joseph, which was the sonne of Juda,

27 Which was the sonne of Joanna, which was the sonne of Rhesa, which was the sonne of Zorobabel, which was the sonne of Salathiel, which was the sonne of Neri,

28 Which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Addi, which was the sonne of Cosam, which was the sonne of Elmodam, which was the sonne of Er,

29 Which was the sonne of Jose, which was the sonne of Eliezer, which was the sonne of Jorim, which was the sonne of Matthat, which was the sonne of Levi,

30 Which was the sonne of Simeon, which was the sonne of Juda, which was the sonne of Joseph, which was the sonne of Jonan, which was the sonne of Eliakim,

31 Which was the sonne of Melea, which was the sonne of Menan, which was the sonne of Mattatha, which was the sonne of Nathan, which was the sonne of David,

32 Which was the sonne of Jesse, which was the sonne of Obed, which was the sonne of Booz, which was the sonne of Salmon, which was the sonne of Naasson,

33 Which was the sonne of Aminadab, which was the sonne of Aram, which was the sonne of Esrom, which was the sonne of Phares, which was the sonne of Juda,

34 Which was the sonne of Jacob, which was the sonne of Isaac, which was the sonne of Abraham, which was the sonne of Thara, which was the sonne of Nachor,

35 Which was the sonne of Saruch, which was the sonne of Ragau, which was the sonne of Phalec, which was the sonne of Heber, which was the sonne of Sala,

36 Which was the sonne of Cainan, which was the sonne of Arphaxad, which was the sonne of Sem, which was the sonne of Noe, which was the sonne of Lamech,

37 Which was the sonne of Mathusala, which was the sonne of Enoch, which was the sonne of Jared, which was the sonne of Maleleel, which was the sonne of Cainan,

38 Which was the sonne of Enos, which was the sonne of Seth, which was the sonne of Adam, which was the sonne of God.

775

CHAP. IIII.

1 *The temptation and fasting of Christ.* 13 *He overcometh the devil:* 14 *beginneth to preach.* 16 *The people of Nazareth admire his gracious words.* 33 *He cureth one possessed of a devil,* 38 *Peters mother in law,* 40 *and divers other sick persons.* 41 *The devils acknowledge Christ, and are reproved for it.* 43 *He preacheth through the cities.*

AND * Jesus being full of the holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the spirit into the wildernesse,

* Matth. 4. 1

2 Being fourty dayes tempted of the devil, and in those dayes he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

5 And the devil taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdomes of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them; for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will, I give it.

7 If thou therefore wilt ‖ worship me, all shall be thine.

‖ Or, fall down before me.

8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serve.

9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy self down from hence.

10 For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee.

11 And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

14 ¶ And Jesus returned in the power of the spirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

* Matth. 13. 54. 16 ¶ And he came to * Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and as his custome was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up for to reade.

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias; and when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

* Isa. 61. 1. 18 * The spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poore, he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blinde, to set at libertie them that are bruised,

19 To preach the acceptable yeare of the Lord.

20 And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down: and the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your eares.

22 And all bare him witnesse, and wondred at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Josephs sonne?

23 And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thy self: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy countrey.

* Matth. 13. 57. 24 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No * prophet is accepted in his own countrey.

* 1. Kings 17. 9. 25 But I tell you of a truth, * many widowes were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three yeares and six moneths, when great famine was throughout all the land:

26 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.

* 2. Kings 5. 14. 27 * And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet: and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

‖ Or, edge. 29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the ‖ brow of the hill (whereon their city was built) that they might cast him down headlong.

30 But he passing through the mids of them went his way,

31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the sabbath-dayes.

* Matth. 7. 29. 32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: * for his word was with power.

* Mark 1. 23. 33 ¶ * And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice,

‖ Or, away. 34 Saying, ‖ Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy one of God.

35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the mids, he came out of him and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this: for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the countrey round about.

* Matth. 8. 14. 38 ¶ * And he arose out of the synagogue, and entred into Simons house: and Simons wives mother was taken with a great fever, and they besought him for her.

39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever, and it left her. And immediately she arose and ministred unto them.

* Mark 1. 34. 40 ¶ Now when the sunne was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one of them and healed them.

‖ Or, to say that they knew him to be Christ. 41 * And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the sonne of God. And he rebuking them, suffered them not ‖ to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.

42 And when it was day, he departed and went into a desert place, and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

43 And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdome of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

44 And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ teacheth the people out of Peters ship; 4 in a miraculous taking of fishes, sheweth how he will make him and his partners fishers of men; 12 cleanseth the leper; 16 prayeth in the wilderneſſe; 18 healeth one sick of the palsie; 27 calleth Matthew the publicane; 29 eateth with sinners, as being the physician of souls; 34 foretelleth the fastings and afflictions of the apostles after his ascension, 36 and likeneth faint-hearted and weak disciples to old bottles, and worn garments.

* Matt. 4. 18. AND * it came to passe, that as the people pressed upon him to heare the word of God, he stood by the lake of Genesareth,

2 And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entred into one of the ships which was Simons, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land: and he sat down and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes, and their net brake.

7 And they beckened unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken:

10 And so was also James and John the sonnes of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all and followed him.

12 ¶ * And

12 ¶ * And it came to passe, when he was in a certain city, behold, a man full of leprosie: who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, & besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

* Matt. 8. 2.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, be thou clean: and immediately the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go and shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himself into the wildernesse, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees, and doctours of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

* Matt. 9. 2.

18 ¶ * And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house top, and let him down through the tiling with his couch, into the midst before Jesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sinnes are forgiven thee.

21 And the Scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sinnes but God alone?

22 But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiven thee, or to say, Rise up and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath power upon earth to forgive sinnes (he said unto the sick of the palsie) I say unto thee, Arise, & take up thy couch, & go into thine house.

25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to day.

* Matt. 9. 9.

27 ¶ * And after these things he went forth, and saw a publicane named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custome: & he said unto him, Follow me.

28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

29 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house: and there was a great company of publicanes, and of others that sat down with them:

30 But their Scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicanes and sinners?

31 And Jesus answering, said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician: but they that are sick.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

* Matth. 9. 14.

33 ¶ And they said unto him, * Why do the disciples of John fast often, and make prayers, and likewise the disciples of the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink?

34 And he said unto them, Can ye make the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

36 ¶ And he spake also a parable unto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old: if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles, and both are preserved.

39 No man also having drunk old wine, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ reproveth the Pharisees blindnesse about the observation of the sabbath, by scripture, reason, and miracle: 13 chooseth twelve apostles: 17 healeth the diseased: 20 preacheth to his disciples before the people of blessings and curses; 27 how we must love our enemies, 46 and joyn the obedience of good works to the hearing of the word, lest in the evil day of temptation we fall like an house built upon the face of the earth without any foundation.

AND * it came to passe on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields: and his disciples plucked the eares of corn, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands.

* Matt. 12. 1.

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawfull to do on the sabbath-dayes?

3 And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawfull to eat but for the priests alone?

5 And he said unto them, That the Sonne of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

6 * And it came to passe also on another sabbath, that he entred into the synagogue and taught, and there was a man whose right hand was withered.

* Matt. 12. 9.

7 And the Scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day: that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the mids. And he arose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing, Is it lawfull on the sabbath-dayes to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand: and he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madnesse, and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 ¶ And when it was day he called unto him his disciples: * and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named Apostles:

* Matt. 10. 1.

14 Simon (whom he also named Peter) and Andrew his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew,

15 Matthew

778

15 Matthew and Thomas, James the sonne of Alphæus, and Simon called Zelotes,
* Jude 1. 16 And Judas * the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.
17 ¶ And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases:
18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed.
19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.
* Matt. 5. 3. 20 ¶ And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, * Blessed be ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God.
21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.
22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproch you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Sonne of mans sake.
23 Rejoyce ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.
* Amos 6. 1. 24 * But woe unto you that are rich: for ye have received your consolation.
* Isa. 65. 13. 25 * Woe unto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourn and weep.
26 Woe unto you when all men shall speak well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.
* Matt. 5. 44. 27 ¶ * But I say unto you which heare, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you.
28 Blesse them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.
*Matt. 5. 39. * 1. Cor. 6. 7. 29 * And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, offer also the other: * and him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid not to take thy coat also.
30 Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask them not again.
* Matth. 7. 12. Tob. 4. 15. 31 * And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise.
* Matth. 5. 46. 32 * For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them.
33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.
* Matt. 5. 42. 34 * And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again.
35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend hoping for nothing again: and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the highest: for he is kinde unto the unthankfull, and to the evil.
36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull.
* Matt. 7. 1. 37 * Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven:
38 Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosome. For with the same measure that ye mete withall, it shall be measured to you again.
39 And he spake a parable unto them, * Can the blinde lead the blinde? shall they not both fall into the ditch?
* Matth. 15. 14.
40 The disciple is not above his master: but every one || that is perfect shall be as his master.
* Matth. 10. 24. || *Or*, shall be perfected as his master.
41 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye?
* Matth. 7. 3. 42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thy self beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.
43 * For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.
* Matth. 7. 16. 44 For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush gather they grapes.
45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.
* Matth. 7. 21. 46 ¶ * And why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?
47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doth them, I will shew you to whom he is like.
48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock.
49 But he that heareth, and doth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruine of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ findeth a greater faith in the centurion a Gentile, then in any of the Jews; 10 healeth his servant being absent; 11 raiseth from death the widows sonne at Nain; 19 answereth Johns messengers with the declaration of his miracles; 24 testifieth to the people what opinion he held of John; 30 inveigheth against the Jews, who with neither the manners of John nor of Jesus could be wonne; 36 and sheweth by occasion of Mary Magdalene, how he is a friend to sinners, not to maintain them in sinnes, but to forgive them their sinnes, upon their faith and repentance.

NOw when he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, * he entred into Capernaum.
* Matt. 8. 5.
2 And a certain centurions servant, who was deare unto him, was sick and ready to die.
3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.
4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, that he was worthy for whom he should do this.
5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.
6 Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not farre from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thy self, for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof.

7 Where-

7 Wherefore neither thought I my self worthy to come unto thee: but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set under authority, having under me souldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a citie called Naim; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the citie, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the onely sonne of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the citie was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the ‖ biere, (and they that bare him stood still) and he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise.

‖ Or, coffin.

15 And he that was dead, sat up, and began to speak: and he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all, and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us, and that God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 * And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things.

* Matt. 11. 2.

19 ¶ And John calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them unto Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?

20 When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another?

21 And in that same houre he cured many of their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits, and unto many that were blinde he gave sight.

22 Then Jesus answering said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard, how that the blinde see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf heare, the dead are raised, to the poore the gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings courts.

26 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more then a prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet then John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 And all the people that heard him, and the publicanes justified God, being baptized with the baptisme of John.

779

30 But the Pharisees and lawyers ‖ rejected the counsel of God ‖ against themselves, being not baptized of him.

‖ Or, frustrated.
‖ Or, within themselves.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, * Wherunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

* Matt. 11. 16.

32 They are like unto children sitting in the market-place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine, and ye say, He hath a devil.

34 The Sonne of man is come eating and drinking, and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicanes and sinners.

35 But wisdome is justified of all her children.

36 ¶ * And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisees house, and sat down to meat.

* Mark 14.

37 And behold, a woman in the citie, which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisees house, brought an alabaster box of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behinde him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certain creditour which had two debters: the one ought five hundred ‖ pence, and the other fifty.

‖ See Matt. 18. 28.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, Which of them will love him most?

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.

45 Thou gavest me no kisse: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feet.

46 Mine head with oyl thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sinnes, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

48 And he said unto her, Thy sinnes are forgiven.

49 And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sinnes also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee, go in peace.

CHAP.

780

CHAP. VIII.

1 Women miniſter unto Chriſt of their ſubſtance. 4 Chriſt after he had preached from place to place, attended with his apoſtles, propoundeth the parable of the ſower, 16 and of the candle; 21 declareth who are his mother, and brethren; 22 rebuketh the windes; 26 caſteth the legion of devils out of the man, into the herd of ſwine; 37 is rejected of the Gadarenes; 43 healeth the woman of her bloudy iſſue; 49 and raiſeth from death Jairus daughter.

AND it came to paſſe afterward, that he went throughout every city and village preaching, and ſhewing the glad tidings of the kingdome of God: and the twelve were with him,

2 And certain women which had been healed of evil ſpirits, and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, * out of whom went ſeven devils,

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herods ſteward, and Suſanna, and many others which miniſtred unto him of their ſubſtance.

4 ¶ * And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he ſpake by a parable:

5 A ſower went out to ſow his ſeed: and as he ſowed, ſome fell by the wayes ſide, and it was troden down, and the fowls of the aire devoured it.

6 And ſome fell upon a rock, and aſſoon as it was ſprung up, it withered away, becauſe it lacked moiſture.

7 And ſome fell among thorns, and the thorns ſprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and ſprang up, and bare fruit an hundred fold. And when he had ſaid theſe things, he cried, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 And his diſciples asked him, ſaying, What might this parable be?

10 And he ſaid, Unto you it is given to know the myſteries of the kingdome of God: but to others in parables; that ſeeing they might not ſee, and hearing they might not underſtand.

11 * Now the parable is this: The ſeed is the word of God.

12 Thoſe by the way ſide, are they that heare: then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, leſt they ſhould beleeve and be ſaved.

13 They on the rock, are they, which when they heare, receive the word with joy; and theſe have no root, which for a while beleeve, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns, are they, which when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches, and pleaſures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they which in an honeſt and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a veſſel, or putteth it under a bed: but ſetteth it on a candleſtick, that they which enter in may ſee the light.

17 * For nothing is ſecret, that ſhall not be made manifeſt: neither any thing hid, that ſhall not be known, and come abroad.

18 Take heed therefore how ye heare: * for whoſoever hath, to him ſhall be given; and whoſoever hath not, from him ſhall be taken even that which he ‖ ſeemeth to have.

19 ¶ Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the preaſſe.

20 And it was told him by certain, which ſaid, Thy mother and thy brethren ſtand without, deſiring to ſee thee.

21 And he anſwered and ſaid unto them, My mother and my brethren are theſe which heare the word of God, and do it.

22 ¶ * Now it came to paſſe on a certain day, that he went into a ſhip with his diſciples: and he ſaid unto them, Let us go over unto the other ſide of the lake; and they launched forth.

23 But as they ſailed, he fell aſleep: and there came down a ſtorm of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, ſaying, Maſter, maſter, we periſh. Then he aroſe, and rebuked the winde, and the raging of the water: and they ceaſed, and there was a calm.

25 And he ſaid unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondred, ſaying one to another, What manner of man is this? for he commandeth even the windes and water, and they obey him.

26 ¶ * And they arrived at the countrey of the Gadarenes, which is over againſt Galilee.

27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city, a certain man which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any houſe, but in the tombes.

28 When he ſaw Jeſus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice ſaid, What have I to do with thee, Jeſus thou ſonne of God moſt high? I beſeech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the unclean ſpirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him, and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters, and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wildernesſe.)

30 And Jeſus asked him, ſaying, What is thy name? And he ſaid, Legion: becauſe many devils were entred into him.

31 And they beſought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

32 And there was there an herd of many ſwine feeding on the mountain: and they beſought him that he would ſuffer them to enter into them: and he ſuffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entred into the ſwine: and the herd ran violently down a ſteep place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them ſaw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city and in the countrey.

35 Then they went out to ſee what was done, and came to Jeſus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, ſitting at the feet of Jeſus, clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid.

36 They alſo which ſaw it, told them by what means he that was poſſeſſed of the devils, was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the countrey of the Gadarenes round about, beſought him to depart from them; for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ſhip, and returned back again.

38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed, beſought him that he might be with him: but Jeſus ſent him away, ſaying,

39 Return to thine own houſe, and ſhew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went

* Mark 16.9

* Matt. 13. 2.

* Matt. 13. 18.

* Matt 5.15

* Matt. 10. 26.
* Matt. 13. 12.
‖ Or, thinketh that he hath
* Matt. 12. 46.

* Matt. 8.23.

* Matt. 8.28

went his way, and published throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him.

* Matt. 9. 18

41 ¶ * And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue, and he fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had one onely daughter, about twelve yeares of age, and she lay a dying. (But as he went the people thronged him.

43 ¶ And a woman having an issue of bloud twelve yeares, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behinde him, and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of bloud stanched.

45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter, and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and preasse thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said, Some body hath touched me: for I perceive that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, go in peace.)

49 ¶ While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogues house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Master.

50 But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not, believe onely, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not, she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ sendeth his apostles to work miracles, and to preach. 7 Herod desireth to see Christ. 17 Christ feedeth five thousand: 18 enquireth what opinion the world had of him; foretelleth his passion: 23 proposeth to all the pattern of his patience. 28 The transfiguration. 37 He healeth the lunatick: 43 again forewarneth his disciples of his passion: 46 commendeth humility: 51 biddeth them to shew mildenesse towards all, without desire of revenge. 57 Divers would follow him, but upon conditions.

* Matt. 10. 1

Then * he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdome of God, and to heal the sick.

781

3 And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money, neither have two coats apiece.

4 And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet for a testimony against them.

6 And they departed and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

7 ¶ * Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead:

* Matt. 14. 1

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but who is this of whom I heare such things? And he desired to see him.

10 ¶ And the apostles when they were returned, told him all that they had done. * And he took them, and went aside privately into a desert place, belonging to the city called Bethsaida.

* Matt. 14. 13

11 And the people when they knew it, followed him: and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

12 * And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and countrey round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

* Matt. 14. 15

13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat. And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes, except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

16 Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them, twelve baskets.

18 ¶ * And it came to passe as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

* Matt. 16. 13

19 They answering, said, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

20 He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.

21 And he straitly charged them and commanded them to tell no man that thing,

22 Saying, * The Sonne of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief priests, and Scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.

* Matt. 17. 22.

23 ¶ * And he said to them all, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse daily, and follow me.

* Matt. 10. 38.

24 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

25 * For

782

25 * For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

* Matt. 16. 26. Mark 8. 36.

26 * For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory and in his fathers, and of the holy angels.

* Matt. 10. 33.

27 * But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdome of God.

* Matt. 16. 28.

28 ¶ * And it came to passe about an eight dayes after these ‖ sayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.

* Matt. 17. 1. ‖ Or, things.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and glistering.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias.

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease, which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.

32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud, and overshadowed them, and they feared as they entred into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Sonne, heare him.

36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and told no man in those dayes any of those things which they had seen.

37 ¶ * And it came to passe, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him.

* Matt. 17. 14.

38 And behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my sonne, for he is mine onely childe.

39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him, that he foameth again, and bruising him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Jesus answering, said, O faithlesse and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? Bring thy sonne hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare him: and Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the childe, and delivered him again to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: but while they wondred every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,

* Matt. 17. 22.

44 * Let these sayings sink down into your eares: for the Sonne of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.

45 But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.

* Matt. 18. 1 Mark 9. 34.

46 ¶ * Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.

47 And Jesus perceiving the thought of their heart, took a childe, and set him by him,

48 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this childe in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

49 ¶ * And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and we forbad him, because he followeth not with us.

* Mark 9. 38

50 And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against us, is for us.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,

52 And sent messengers before his face, and they went, and entred into a village of the Samaritanes to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

54 And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as * Elias did?

* 2. Kings 1. 10.

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.

57 ¶ * And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

* Matt. 8. 19

58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the aire have nests, but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 * And he said unto another, Follow me: but he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

* Matt. 8. 21.

60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead; but go thou and preach the kingdome of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first go bid them farewell which are at home at my house.

62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ sendeth out at once seventy disciples to work miracles, and to preach: 17 admonisheth them to be humble, and wherein to rejoyce: 21 thanketh his Father for his grace: 23 magnifieth the happy estate of his church: 25 teacheth the lawyer how to attain eternall life, and to take every one for his neighbour that needeth his mercy: 41 reprehendeth Martha, and commendeth Mary her sister.

AFter * these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city, and place, whither he himself would come.

* Matt. 10. 1.

2 Therefore said he unto them, * The harvest truely is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.

* Matt. 9. 37.

3 Go your wayes: * behold, I send you forth as lambes among wolves.

* Matth. 10. 16.

4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

5 * And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house.

* Matth. 10. 11.

6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And

8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you.
9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdome of God is come nigh unto you.
10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your wayes out into the streets of the same, and say,
11 Even the very dust of your city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdome of God is come nigh unto you.
12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, then for that city.
13 * Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.
14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgement, then for you.
15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.
16 * He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.
17 ¶ And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.
18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning, fall from heaven.
19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.
20 Notwithstanding in this rejoyce not, that the spirits are subject unto you: but rather rejoyce because your names are written in heaven.
21 ¶ In that houre Jesus rejoyced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.
22 ‖ All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reveal him.
23 ¶ And he turned him unto his disciples, and said privately, * Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see.
24 For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to heare those things which ye heare, and have not heard them.
25 ¶ And behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, * Master, what shall I do to inherit eternall life?
26 He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou?
27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy minde; and thy neighbour as thy self.
28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.
29 But he willing to justifie himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?
30 And Jesus answering, said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among theeves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead.
31 And by chance there came down a certain priest that way, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.
32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.
33 But a certain Samaritane, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,
34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oyl and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inne, and took care of him.
35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two ‖ pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him, and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again I will repay thee.
36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the theeves?
37 And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.
38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went, that he entred into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha, received him into her house.
39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus feet, and heard his word.
40 But Martha was cumbred about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me.
41 And Jesus answered, and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about many things:
42 But one thing is needfull, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

* Matth. 11. 21.
* Matth. 10. 40.
‖ *Many ancient copies adde these words,* And turning to his disciples, he said.
* Matth. 13. 16.
* Matth. 22. 35.
‖ *See* Matth. 20. 2.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ teacheth to pray, and that instantly: 11 assuring that God so will give us good things. 14 He casting out a dumbe devil, rebuketh the blasphemous Pharisees: 28 and sheweth who are blessed: 29 preacheth to the people: 37 and reprehendeth the outward shew of holinesse in the Pharisees, Scribes, and lawyers.

AND it came to passe, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.
2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, * Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done as in heaven, so in earth.
3 Give us ‖ day by day our daily bread.
4 And forgive us our sinnes; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.
5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;
6 For a friend of mine ‖ in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him:
7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not, the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.
8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunitie, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.
9 * And

* Matt. 6. 9.
‖ *Or,* for the day.
‖ *Or,* out of his way.

CHAP. XII.

1 Christ preacheth to his disciples to avoid hypocrisie and fearfulnesse in publishing his doctrine: 13 warneth the people to beware of covetousnes, by the parable of the rich man who set up greater barns, 22 We must not be over-carefull of earthly things, 31 but seek the kingdome of God, 33 give alms, 36 be ready at a knock to open to our Lord whensoever he cometh. 41 Christs ministers are to see to their charge, 49 and look for persecution. 54 The people must take this time of grace, 58 because it is a fearfull thing to die without reconciliation.

*Matt.16.6. IN * the meane time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

*Matt.10.26 2 * For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known.

3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darknesse, shall be heard in the light: and that which ye have spoken in the eare in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house tops.

*Matt.10.28 4 * And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, have no more that they can do.

5 But I will forewarn you whom you shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell, yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

‖See Mat.10.29. 6 Are not five sparrows sold for two ‖ farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

7 But even the very haires of your head are all numbred. Fear not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

*Matt.10.32 2.Tim.2.12. 8 * Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confesse me before men, him shall the Sonne of man also confesse before the angels of God.

9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God.

10 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

*Matt.10.19 11 * And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same houre what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you?

15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousnesse: for a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully.

17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do, I will pull down my barns and build greater, and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many yeares, take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry.

20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night ‖ thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?

‖Or, do they require thy soul.

21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich towards God.

22 ¶ And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, *Take no thought for your life what ye shall eat, neither for the body what ye shall put on.

*Matt.6.25.

23 The life is more then meat, and the body is more then raiment.

24 Consider the ravens, for they neither sow nor reap, which neither have storehouse nor barn, and God feedeth them. How much more are ye better then the fowls?

25 And which of you with taking thought can adde to his stature one cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

27 Consider the lilies how they grow, they toyl not, they spin not: and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory, was not arayed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe the grasse, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the oven: how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith?

29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, ‖ neither be ye of doubtfull minde.

‖Or, live not in carefull suspense.

30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things.

31 ¶ But rather seek ye the kingdome of God, and all these things shall be added unto you.

32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Fathers good pleasure to give you the kingdome.

33 Sell that ye have, and give alms: * provide your selves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approcheth, neither moth corrupteth.

*Matt.6.20.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 * Let your loyns be girded about, and your lights burning,

*1.Pet.1.13.

36 And ye your selves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding, that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

37 Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when he cometh shall finde watching: verily, I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and finde them so, blessed are those servants.

39 * And this know, that if the good man of the house had known what houre the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

*Matt.24.43

40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Sonne of man cometh at an houre when ye think not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his houshold, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

43 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall finde so doing.

44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

786

45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming, and shall begin to beat the men-servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken:

46 The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an houre when he is not ware, and will ‖ cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

‖ *Or*, cut him off.

47 And that servant which knew his lords will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I have a baptisme to be baptized with, and how am I ‖ straitned till it be accomplished!

‖ *Or*, pained.

51 * Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tel you, Nay; but rather division.

* Mat. 10. 34.

52 For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three.

53 The father shall be divided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 ¶ And he said also to the people, * When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it is.

* Matt. 16. 2.

55 And when ye see the south winde blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to passe.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, and of the earth: but how is it, that ye do not discern this time?

57 Yea, and why even of your selves judge ye not what is right?

58 ¶ * When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

* Matt. 5. 25.

59 I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast payed the very last ‖ mite.

‖ *See* Mark 12. 42.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Christ preacheth repentance upon the punishment of the Galileans, and others.* 6 *The fruitlesse fig-tree may not stand.* 11 *He healeth the crooked woman:* 18 *sheweth the powerfull working of the word in the hearts of his chosen, by the parable of the grain of mustard-seed, and of leaven:* 24 *exhorteth to enter in at the strait gate:* 31 *and reproveth Herod and Jerusalem.*

THere were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose bloud Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay; but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were ‖ sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem?

‖ *Or*, debters.

5 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three yeares I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and finde none: cut it down, why cumbreth it the ground?

8 And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this yeare also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

9 And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen yeares, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up her self.

12 And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity.

13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six dayes in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his asse from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo these eighteen yeares, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoyced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 ¶ * Then said he, Unto what is the kingdome of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it?

* Matt. 13. 31

19 It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree: and the fowls of the aire lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdome of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three ‖ measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

‖ *See* Matth. 13. 33.

22 * And he went through the cities and villages, teaching and journeying towards Jerusalem.

* Matt. 9. 35.

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

24 ¶ * Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

* Matt. 7. 13.

25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the doore, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence you are:

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

27 * But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not

* Matt. 7. 23.

not whence you are, depart from me all ye workers of iniquitie.

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdome of God, and you your selves thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdome of God.

*Matt.19.30 30 * And behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

31 ¶ The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Nevertheless, I must walk to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

*Matt.23.37 34 * O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee: how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not?

35 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: And verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 Christ healeth the dropsie on the sabbath: 7 teacheth humilitie: 12 to feast the poore. 15 Under the parable of the great supper, sheweth how worldly minded men, who contemne the word of God, shall be shut out of heaven: 25 Those who will be his disciples, to bear their crosse, must make their accounts aforehand, lest with shame they revolt from him afterward, 34 and become altogether unprofitable, like salt that hath lost his savour.

AND it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsie.

3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawfull to heal on the sabbath-day?

4 And they held their peace. And he took him and healed him, and let him go:

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an asse or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day?

6 And they could not answer him again to these things.

7 ¶ And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms, saying unto them,

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room, lest a more honourable man then thou be bidden of him:

9 And he that bade thee and him, come and say to thee, Give this man place: and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.

*Pro.25.6,7. 10 * But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room, that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.

*Matt.23.12 11 * For whosoever exalteth himself, shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.

12 ¶ Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee.

*Tob.4.7. 13 But when thou makest a feast, call * the poore, the maimed, the lame, the blinde:

14 And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sat at meat with him, heard these things, he said unto him, *Rev.19.9. * Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdome of God.

*Matt.22.2. 16 * Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many:

17 And sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse: The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused.

20 And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come.

21 So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the high wayes and hedges, and compell them to come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,

*Matt.10.37 26 * If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

27 And whosoever doth not bear his crosse, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it?

29 Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin to mock him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going to make warre against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

*Matt.5.13. 34 ¶ * Salt is good: but if the salt have

lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned?
35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill, but men cast it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

1 The parable of the lost sheep: 8 of the piece of silver: 11 of the prodigall sonne.

THen drew neare unto him all the publicanes and sinners for to heare him.
2 And the Pharisees and Scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.
3 ¶ And he spake this parable unto them, saying,
4 * What man of you having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wildernesse, and go after that which is lost, untill he finde it?
5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoycing.
6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoyce with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost.
7 I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more then over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.
8 ¶ Either what woman having ten ‖ pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she finde it?
9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoyce with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost.
10 Likewise I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God, over one sinner that repenteth.
11 ¶ And he said, A certain man had two sonnes:
12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living.
13 And not many dayes after, the younger sonne gathered all together, and took his journey into a farre country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.
14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land, and he began to be in want.
15 And he went and joyned himself to a citizen of that country, and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.
16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.
17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my fathers have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger!
18 I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee,
19 And am no more worthy to be called thy sonne: make me as one of thy hired servants.
20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him.
21 And the sonne said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.
22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet.
23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us eat and be merry.
24 For this my sonne was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.
25 Now his elder sonne was in the field: and as he came, and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing.
26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.
27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.
28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.
29 And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many yeares do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment, and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:
30 But assoon as this thy sonne was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.
31 And he said unto him, Sonne, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.
32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The parable of the unjust steward. 14 Christ reproveth the hypocrisie of the covetous Pharisees. 19 The rich glutton, and Lazarus the begger.

AND he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man which had a steward, and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods.
2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I heare this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.
3 Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.
4 I am resolved what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.
5 So he called every one of his lords debters unto him, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord?
6 And he said, An hundred ‖ measures of oyl. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.
7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred ‖ measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourescore.
8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.
9 And I say unto you, Make to your selves friends of the ‖ Mammon of unrighteousnesse, that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.
10 He that is faithfull in that which is least, is faithfull also in much: and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much.

11 If

* Matt. 18. 12.

‖ Drachma *here translated a piece of silver, is the eighth part of an ounce, which cometh to seven pence halfpeny, and is equall to the Romane peny.* Matt. 18. 28.

‖ The word Batus in the originall, containeth nine gallons three quarts.

‖ The word here interpreted a measure, in the originall containeth about fourteen bushels and a pottle

‖ Or, riches.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithfull in the unrighteous ‖ Mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

‖ *Or*, riches.

12 And if ye have not been faithfull in that which is another mans, who shall give you that which is your own?

13 ¶ * No servant can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one and love the other, or else he will hold to the one and despise the other: ye cannot serve God and Mammon.

*Matt.6.24.

14 And the Pharisees also who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said unto them, Ye are they which justifie your selves before men, but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed amongst men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 * The law and the prophets were untill John: since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and every man preasseth into it.

*Matt.11.11.

17 * And it is easier for heaven and earth to passe, then one title of the law to fail.

*Matt.5.18.

18 * Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery.

* Matt.5.32.

19 ¶ There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day.

20 And there was a certain begger named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores,

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbes which fell from the rich mans table: moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe that the begger died, and was carried by the angels into Abrahams bosome: the rich man also died and was buried.

23 And in hell he lift up his eyes being in torments, and seeth Abraham afarre off, and Lazarus in his bosome.

24 And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that they which would passe from hence to you, cannot, neither can they passe to us, that would come from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I have five brethren; that he may testifie unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets, let them heare them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And he said unto him, If they heare not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be perswaded, though one rose from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ teacheth to avoid occasions of offence. 3 One to forgive another. 6 The power of faith. 7 How we are bound to God, and not he to us. 11 He healeth ten lepers. 22 Of the kingdome of God, and the coming of the Sonne of man.

THen said he unto the disciples, * It is impossible but that offences will come, but woe unto him through whom they come.

*Matt.18.7.

2 It were better for him that a milstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 ¶ Take heed to your selves: * If thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him, and if he repent, forgive him.

*Matt.18.21

4 And if he trespasse against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 * And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye might say unto this sycamine-tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea, and it should obey you.

*Matt.17.20.

7 But which of you having a servant plowing, or keeding cattell, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat?

8 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken: and afterward thou shalt eat and drink.

9 Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

11 ¶ And it came to passe, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afarre off:

13 And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus Master have mercy on us.

14 And when he saw them, he said unto them, * Go shew your selves unto the priests: And it came to passe that as they went, they were cleansed.

*Levit.14.2.

15 And one of them when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God,

16 And fell down on his face at his feet giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Jesus answering said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to give glorie to God, save this stranger.

19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdome of God should come; he answered them and said, The kingdome of God cometh not ‖ with observation.

‖ *Or*, with outward shew.

21 Neither shall they say, Lo here, or lo there: for behold, the kingdome of God is ‖ within you.

‖ *Or*, among you.

22 And he said unto the disciples, The dayes will come when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 * And they shall say to you, See here, or see there: go not after them, nor follow them.

*Matt.24.23

24 For as the lightning that lightneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven: so shall also the Sonne of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

26 * And as it was in the dayes of Noe; so shall it be also in the dayes of the Sonne of man.
* Gen. 7.

27 They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, untill the day that Noe entred into the ark: and the flood came and destroyed them all.

28 * Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot, they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded:
* Gen. 19.

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all:

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Sonne of man is revealed.

31 In that day, he which shall be upon the house top, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

32 * Remember Lots wife.
*Gen. 19. 26.

33 * Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it.
*Matt. 16. 25.

34 * I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, the other shall be left.
*Matt. 24. 40.

35 Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

36 ‖ Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.
‖ *This 36 verse is wanting in most of the Greek copies.*

37 And they answered and said unto him, * Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.
*Matt. 24. 28.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Of the importunate widow. 9 Of the Pharisee and the publicane. 15 Children brought to Christ. 18 A ruler that would follow Christ, but is hindered by his riches. 28 The reward of them that leave all for his sake. 31 He foresheweth his death, 35 and restoreth a blinde man to his sight.

AND he spake a parable unto them, to this end, that men ought * always to pray, and not to faint,
*1. Thes. 5. 17.

2 Saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that city, and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversarie.

4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continuall coming she weary me.

6 And the Lord said, Heare what the unjust judge saith.

7 And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?

8 I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Sonne of man cometh, shall he finde faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves ‖ that they were righteous, and despised others:
‖ Or, as being righteous.

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a publicane.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publicane.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possesse.

13 And the publicane standing afarre off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be mercifull to me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather then the other: * for every one that exalteth himself, shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself, shall be exalted.
*Matt. 23. 12.

15 And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdome of God as a little childe, shall in no wise enter therein.

18 * And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternall life?
*Matt. 19. 16.

19 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, that is, God.

20 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witnesse, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up.

22 Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poore, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowfull, for he was very rich.

24 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowfull, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdome of God!

25 For it is easier for a camel to go through a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they that heard it, said, Who then can be saved?

27 And he said, The things which are unpossible with men, are possible with God.

28 * Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.
*Matt. 19. 27.

29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

31 ¶ * Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Sonne of man shall be accomplished.
*Matt. 20. 17.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated and spitted on:

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death, and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ * And it came to passe, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blinde man sat by the way side begging:
*Matt. 20. 29.

36 And hearing the multitude passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And

38 And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou Sonne of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Thou Sonne of David, have mercy on me.

40 And Jesus stood and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come neare, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight, thy faith hath saved thee.

43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Of Zacheus a publicane. 11 The ten pieces of money. 28 Christ rideth into Jerusalem with triumph: 41 weepeth over it: 45 driveth the buyers and sellers out of the temple: 47 teaching daily in it. The rulers would have destroyed him, but for fear of the people.

AND Jesus entred and passed through Jericho.

2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chiefe among the publicanes, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was, and could not for the preasse, because he was little of stature.

4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycomore-tree to see him; for he was to passe that way.

5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him, and said unto him, Zacheus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zacheus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poore, and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourefold.

9 And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is the sonne of Abraham.

*Mat. 18. 11 10 * For the Sonne of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdome of God should immediately appeare.

*Matt. 25. 14. 12 * He said therefore, A certain noble man went into a farre country to receive for himself a kingdome, and to return.

13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten ‖ pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come.

‖ Mina, *here translated a pound, is 12 ounces and an half: which according to five shillings the ounce, is three pounds two shillings six pence.*

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reigne over us.

15 And it came to passe, that when he was returned, having received the kingdome, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithfull in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. 791

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound which I have kept laid up in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant: thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow.

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds.

25 (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds)

26 For I say unto you,* That unto every one which hath, shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. *Mat. 13. 12.

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reigne over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

29 * And it came to passe when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, * Mat. 21. 1.

30 Saying, Go ye into the village over against you, in the which at your entring ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose him? thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoyce and praise God with a loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had seen,

38 Saying, Blessed be the king that cometh in the name of the Lord, peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 And he answered and said unto them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

41 ¶ And when he was come neare, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

42 Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

792

43 For the dayes shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee: and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

*Matt. 21. 12 45 *And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought,

46 Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of theeves.

47 And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief priests and the Scribes, and the chief of the people sought to destroy him,

48 And could not finde what they might do: for all the people ‖ were very attentive to heare him.

‖ Or, hanged on him.

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ avoucheth his authority, by a question of Johns baptisme. 9 The parable of the vineyard. 19 Of giving tribute to Cesar. 27 He convinceth the Sadduces that denied the resurrection. 41 How Christ is the sonne of David. 45 He warneth his disciples to beware of the Scribes.

*Matt. 21. 23 AND *it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the Scribes came upon him, with the elders,

2 And spake unto him, saying, Tell us, By what authority doest thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

3 And he answered and said unto them, I will also aske you one thing, and answer me.

4 The baptisme of John, was it from heaven, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then believed ye him not?

6 But and if we say, Of men; all the people will stone us: for they be perswaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they answered, That they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

*Matt. 21. 33 9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable: *A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a farre country for a long time.

10 And at the season, he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.

11 And again he sent another servant; and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12 And again he sent the third, and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved sonne: it may be they will reverence him when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, *The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?

*Psal. 118. 22

18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

19 ¶ And the chief priests and the Scribes the same houre sought to lay hands on him, and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which would feigne themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governour.

21 And they asked him, saying, *Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God ‖ truly.

*Matt. 22. 16

‖ Or, of a truth.

22 Is it lawfull for us to give tribute unto Cesar, or no?

23 But he perceived their craftinesse, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a ‖ peny: whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Cesars.

‖ See Matth. 18. 28.

25 And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Cesar the things which be Cesars, and unto God the things which be Gods.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people, and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

27 ¶ *Then came to him certain of the Sadduces (which denie that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

*Matt. 22. 23

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any mans brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brethren, and the first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childlesse.

31 And the third took her, and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus answering, said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage:

35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marrie, nor are given in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more; for they are equall unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

* Exod. 3. 6. 37 Now that the dead are raised, *even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living; for all live unto him.

39 ¶ Then certain of the Scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all.

*Matt. 22. 42 41 And he said unto them, *How say they that Christ is Davids sonne?

42 And David himself saith in the book of

psalmes, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

44 David therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said unto his disciples,

*Matt.23.5. 46 * Beware of the Scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts.

47 Which devoure widowes houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ commendeth the poore widow. 5 He foretelleth the destruction of the temple, and of the city Jerusalem: 25 The signes also which shall be before the last day. 34 He exhorteth them to be watchfull.

*Mar.12.41. AND he looked up, * and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury.

|| See Mar.12 42. 2 And he saw also a certain poore widow, casting in thither two || mites.

3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more then they all.

4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God, but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

*Matt.24.1. 5 ¶ * And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said,

6 As for these things which ye behold, the dayes will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what signe will there be when these things shall come to passe?

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth neare: go ye not therefore after them.

9 But when ye shall heare of warres, and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to passe, but the end is not by and by.

*Matt.24.7. 10 * Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome:

11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences, and fearfull sights, and great signes shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my names sake.

*Matt.10.19 13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

14 * Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before, what ye shall answer.

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdome, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay, nor resist.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolks, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my names sake.

*Matt.10.30 18 * But there shall not an haire of your head perish.

19 In your patience possesse ye your soules.

20 * And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. 793 *Matt.24.15

21 Then let them which are in Judea, flee to the mountains, and let them which are in the midst of it depart out, and let not them that are in the countreys enter thereinto.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled.

23 But woe unto them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes; for there shall be great distresse in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations, and Jerusalem shall be troden down of the Gentiles, untill the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

*Matt.24.29 25 ¶ * And there shall be signes in the sunne, and in the moon, and in the starres, and upon the earth distresse of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring,

26 Mens hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth; for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to passe, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees,

30 When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves, that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not passe away, till all be fulfilled.

33 Heaven and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfetting, and drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore and pray alwayes, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to passe, and to stand before the Sonne of man.

37 And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called the mount of Olives.

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to heare him.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The Jews conspire against Christ. 3 Satan prepareth Judas to betray him. 7 The apostles prepare the passeover. 19 Christ instituteth his holy supper: 21 covertly foretelleth of the traitour: 24 dehorteth the rest of his apostles from ambition: 32 assureth Peter his faith should not fail, 34 and yet he should deny him thrice. 39 He prayeth in the mount, and sweateth blood: 47 is betrayed with a kisse: 50 he healeth Malchus eare. 54 He is thrice denied of Peter, 63 shamefully abused, 66 and confesseth himself to be the Sonne of God.

*Matt.26.2. NOw * the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the passeover.

2 And the chief priests and Scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.

3 ¶ * Then

794

3 ¶ * Then entred Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.
4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.
5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.
6 And he promised and sought opportunity to betray him unto them ‖ in the absence of the multitude.
7 ¶ * Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passeover must be killed.
8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passeover, that we may eat.
9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?
10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entred into the citie, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water, follow him into the house where he entreth in.
11 And ye shall say unto the good man of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber where I shall eat the passeover with my disciples?
12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished, there make ready.
13 And they went and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passeover.
14 * And when the houre was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.
15 And he said unto them, ‖ With desire I have desired to eat this passeover with you before I suffer.
16 For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, untill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.
17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among your selves.
18 For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, untill the kingdome of God shall come.
19 ¶ * And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you, this do in remembrance of me.
20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my bloud, which is shed for you.
21 ¶ * But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me on the table.
22 And truly the Sonne of man goeth as it was determined, but wo unto that man by whom he is betrayed.
23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.
24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.
25 * And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and they that exercise authority upon them, are called benefactours.
26 But ye shall not be so; but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.
27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? is not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.
28 Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.
29 And I appoint unto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed unto me:
30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdome, * and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.
31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, * Satan hath desired to have you, that he may sift you as wheat:
32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not; and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren.
33 And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee both into prison, and to death.
34 * And he said, I tell thee Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.
35 * And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.
36 Then said he unto them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.
37 For I say unto you, that this that is written, must yet be accomplished in me, * And he was reckoned among the transgressours: for the things concerning me have an end.
38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.
39 ¶ * And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives, and his disciples also followed him.
40 * And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray, that ye enter not into temptation.
41 And he was withdrawn from them about a stones cast, and kneeled down, and prayed,
42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless, not my will, but thine be done.
43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him.
44 And being in an agonie, he prayed more earnestly, and his sweat was as it were great drops of bloud falling down to the ground.
45 And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow,
46 And said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.
47 ¶ And while he yet spake, * behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew neare unto Jesus, to kisse him.
48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse?
49 When they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?
50 ¶ And one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right eare.
51 And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus farre. And he touched his eare, and healed him.
52 Then Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as against a thief, with swords and staves?
53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your houre, and the power of darknesse.
54 ¶ * Then took they him, and led him, and brought him into the high priests house. And Peter followed afarre off.
55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down among them.
56 But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And

*Mat. 20. 14.

‖ Or, without tumult.

*Mat. 26. 17.

*Mat. 26. 20.

‖ Or, I have heartily desired.

*Mat. 26. 26.

*Mat. 26. 21.

*Mat. 20. 25

*Mat. 19. 28.

* 1. Pet. 5. 8.

*Mat. 26. 34.

*Mat. 10. 9.

*Isa. 53. 12.

*Mat. 26. 36.

*Mat. 26. 41

*Mat. 26. 47.

*Mat. 26. 57.

*Mat. 26. 69.

57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.
58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.
59 And about the space of one houre after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.
60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cock crew.
61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter; and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.
62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.
63 ¶ And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote him.
64 And when they had blindfolded him, they strake him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie, who is it that smote thee?
65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.
*Matt. 27. 1. 66 ¶ * And assoon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief priests and the Scribes came together, and led him into their councel,
67 Saying, Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, you will not believe:
68 And if I also ask you, you will not answer me, nor let me go.
69 Hereafter shall the Sonne of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.
70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he said unto them,* Ye say that I am.
*Mark 14. 62 71 And they said, What need we any further witnesse? for we our selves have heard of his own mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 Jesus is accused before Pilate, and sent to Herod. 8 Herod mocketh him. 12 Herod and Pilate are made friends. 18 Barabbas is desired of the people, and is loosed by Pilate, and Jesus is given to be crucified. 27 He telleth the women that lament him, the destruction of Jerusalem: 34 prayeth for his enemies. 39 Two evil doers are crucified with him. 46 His death. 50 His buriall.

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.
2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a king.
*Matt. 27. 11 3 * And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answered him and said, Thou sayest it.
4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests and to the people, I finde no fault in this man.
5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jury, beginning from Galilee to this place.
6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.
7 And assoon as he knew that he belonged unto Herods jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time.
8 ¶ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad, for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.
9 Then he questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.
10 And the chief priests and Scribes stood and vehemently accused him.
11 And Herod with his men of warre set him at naught, and mocked him, and arayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.
12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.
*Matt. 27. 23. 13 ¶ * And Pilate when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers, and the people,
14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people, and behold, I having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him:
15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.
16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.
17 For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.
18 And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas:
19 (Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder was cast in prison)
20 Pilate therefore willing to release Jesus, spake again to them.
21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.
22 And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chastise him, and let him go.
23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief priests prevailed.
‖ Or, assented 24 And Pilate ‖ gave sentence that it should be as they required.
25 And he released unto them, him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.
*Matt. 27. 32 26 * And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the countrey, and on him they laid the crosse, that he might bear it after Jesus.
27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.
28 But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children.
29 For behold, the dayes are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombes that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck.
*Isa. 2. 19. Hos. 10. 8. Revel. 6. 16. *1. Pet. 4. 17. 30 * Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.
31 * For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?
*Matt. 27. 38 32 * And there were also two other malefactours led with him to be put to death.
‖ Or, the place of a scull. 33 And when they were come to the place which is called ‖ Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactours, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.
34 ¶ Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them, for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.
35 And the people stood beholding, and the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved

ved others, let him save himselfe, if he be Christ the chosen of God.

36 And the souldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vineger,

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thy self.

38 And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latine, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactours, which were hanged, railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thy self and us.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds; but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdome.

43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth houre, and there was a darknesse over all the || earth untill the ninth houre.

|| *Or*, land.

45 And the sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the temple was rent in the midst.

46 ¶ And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, * Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

* Psal. 31. 5.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afarre off beholding these things.

50 ¶ * And behold, there was a man named Joseph, a counseller, and he was a good man, and a just:

* Matt. 27. 57

51 (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them) he was of Arimathea, a citie of the Jews (who also himself waited for the kingdome of God)

52 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewen in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments, and rested the sabbath-day, according to the commandment.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Christs resurrection is declared by two angels to the women that come to the sepulchre: 9 these report it to others. 13 Christ himself appeareth to the two disciples that went to Emmaus. 36 Afterward he appeareth to the apostles, and reproveth their unbelief: 47 giveth them a charge: 49 promiseth the holy Ghost: 51 and so ascendeth into heaven.

* Matt. 28. 1

NOw * upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye || the living among the dead?

|| *Or*, him that liveth.

6 He is not here, but is risen: * remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

* Matt. 17. 23.

7 Saying, The Sonne of man must be delivered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

8 And they remembred his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James, and other women that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they beleeved them not.

12 * Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stouping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in himself at that which was come to passe.

* John 20. 6.

13 ¶ * And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs.

* Mark 16. 12.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew neare, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to passe there in these dayes?

19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people:

20 And how the chiefe priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had been he, which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.

24 And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25 Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to beleeve all that the prophets have spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets,

phets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himself.
28 And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went, and he made as though he would have gone further.
29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us; for it is towards evening, and the day is farre spent: and he went in to tarry with them.
30 And it came to passe, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.
31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he ‖ vanished out of their sight.
32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?
33 And they rose up the same houre, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,
34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.
35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.
36 ¶ * And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.
37 But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.
38 And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?
39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my self: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.
40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.
41 And while they yet beleeved not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?
42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an hony-combe.
43 And he took it, and did eat before them.
44 And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalmes concerning me.
45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures,
46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day:
47 And that repentance and remission of sinnes should be preached in his name, among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem.
48 And ye are witnesses of these things.
49 ¶ * And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, untill ye be endued with power from on high.
50 ¶ And he led them out as farre as to Bethany, and he lift up his hands, and blessed them.
51 * And it came to passe, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.
52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy:
53 And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen.

‖ *Or*, ceased to be seen of them.

* Mark 16. 14.

*John 15. 26 Acts 1. 4.

*Mark 16. 19 Acts 1. 9.

The gospel according to S. JOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 *The divinitie, humanitie, and office of Jesus Christ.* 15 *The testimonie of John.* 39 *The calling of Andrew, Peter, &c.*

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.
2 * The same was in the beginning with God.
3 * All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.
4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.
5 And the light shineth in darkenesse, and the darkenesse comprehended it not.
6 ¶ * There was a man sent from God, whose name was John.
7 The same came for a witnesse, to bear witnesse of the light, that all men through him might beleeve.
8 He was not that light, but was sent to bear witnesse of that light.
9 That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.
10 He was in the world, and * the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.
11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.
12 But as many as received him, to them gave he ‖ power to become the sonnes of God, even to them that beleeve on his name:
13 Which were born, not of bloud, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.
14 * And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the onely begotten of the Father) full of grace and truth.
15 ¶ John bare witnesse of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me, is preferred before me; for he was before me.
16 And of his * fulnesse have all we received, and grace for grace.
17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.
18 * No man hath seen God at any time; the onely begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.
19 ¶ And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, Who art thou?
20 And he confessed, and denied not: but confessed, I am not the Christ.
21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou ‖ that prophet? And he answered, No.
22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou, that we may give an answer to them that sent us? what sayest thou of thy self?
23 * He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderneste, Make straight the way of the Lord,

*Gen. 1. 1.

* Col. 1. 16.

*Matt. 3. 1.

*Hebr. 11. 3.

‖ *Or*, the right *or* privilege.

*Matt. 1. 16.

*Col. 1. 19.

* 1. Tim. 6. 16. 1. John 4. 12.

‖ *Or*, a prophet.

*Matt. 3. 3.

798

Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.
24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.
25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet?
26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not.
*Matt.3.11. Acts 19.4.
27 * He it is who coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to unloose.
28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.
29 ¶ The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lambe of God, which ‖ taketh away the sinne of the world.
‖Or, beareth.
30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man, which is preferred before me: for he was before me.
31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.
*Matt. 3.16.
32 * And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven, like a dove, and it abode upon him.
33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.
34 And I saw, and bare record that this is the Sonne of God.
35 ¶ Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples:
36 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lambe of God.
37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.
38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say being interpreted, Master) where ‖ dwellest thou?
‖Or, abidest.
39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was ‖ about the tenth houre.
‖ That was two houres before night.
40 One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.
41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, ‖ the Christ.
‖ Or, the anointed.
42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the sonne of Jona, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, ‖ a stone.
‖Or, Peter.
43 ¶ The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me.
44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the citie of Andrew and Peter.
45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him of whom * Moses in the law, and the * prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the sonne of Joseph.
*Gen.49.10. Deut.18.18. *Isa. 4.2.
46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.
47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile.
48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee.
49 Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Sonne of God, thou art the King of Israel.
50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, beleevest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.
51 And he saith unto him, Verily verily I say unto you, Hereafter you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Sonne of man.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine: 12 departeth into Capernaum, and to Jerusalem; 14 where he purgeth the temple of buyers and sellers. 19 He foretelleth his death and resurrection. 23 Many beleeved because of his miracles, but he would not trust himself with them.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there.
2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage.
3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.
4 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine houre is not yet come.
5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.
6 And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.
7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brimme.
8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governour of the feast. And they bare it.
9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants which drew the water knew) the governour of the feast called the bridegroom,
10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine, and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now.
11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory, and his disciples beleeved on him.
12 ¶ After this, he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many dayes.
13 ¶ And the Jews passeover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem,
14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting;
15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep and the oxen, and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables:
16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence, make not my Fathers house an house of merchandise.
17 And his disciples remembred that it was written, * The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.
*Psal.69.9.
18 ¶ Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What signe shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?
19 Jesus answered and said unto them, * Destroy this temple, and in three dayes I will raise it up.
*Matt.26.61
20 Then

20 Then said the Jews, Fourty and six yeares was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body.

22 When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembred that he had said this unto them: and they beleeved the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast-day, many beleeved in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men,

25 And needed not that any should testifie of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessity of regeneration: 14 of faith in his death. 16 The great love of God towards the world. 18 Condemnation for unbelief. 23 The baptisme, witnesse, and doctrine of John concerning Christ.

THere was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:

2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born ‖ again, he cannot see the kingdome of God.

‖ *Or*, from above.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers wombe, and be born?

5 Jesus answered, Verily verily I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is born of the flesh, is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit, is spirit.

7 Marvell not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born ‖ again.

‖ *Or*, from above.

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be?

10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily verily I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testifie that we have seen; and ye receive not our witnesse.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye beleeve not: how shall ye beleeve if I tell you of heavenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Sonne of man which is in heaven.

14 ¶ * And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wildernesse: even so must the Sonne of man be lifted up:

*Num. 21. 9.

15 That whosoever beleeveth in him, should not perish, but have eternall life.

16 ¶ * For God so loved the world, that he gave his onely begotten Sonne: that whosoever beleeveth in him, should not perish, but have everlasting life.

* 1. Joh. 4. 9.

17 * For God sent not his Sonne into the world to condemne the world: but that the world through him might be saved.

*Chap. 12. 47

18 ¶ He that beleeveth on him, is not condemned: but he that beleeveth not, is condemned already, because he hath not beleeved in the name of the onely begotten Sonne of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, * that light is come into the world, and men loved darknesse rather then light, because their deeds were evil.

*Chap 1. 4.

20 For every one that doth evil, hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be ‖ reproved.

‖ *Or*, discovered.

21 But he that doth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

22 ¶ After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea, and there he tarried with them, * and baptized.

*Chap. 4. 2.

23 ¶ And John also was baptizing in Aenon, neare to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question between some of Johns disciples and the Jews, about purifying.

26 And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, * to whom thou barest witnesse, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him.

* Chap. 1. 7, 34.

27 John answered and said, * A man can ‖ receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.

*Heb. 5. 4.
‖ *Or*, take unto himself.

28 Ye your selves bear me witnesse, that I said, * I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

*Chap. 1. 20

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoyceth greatly because of the bridegrooms voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that cometh from above, is above all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven, is above all.

32 And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath received his testimonie, * hath set to his seal, that God is true.

*Rom. 3. 4.

34 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the spirit by measure unto him.

35 * The Father loveth the Sonne, and hath given all things into his hand.

*Matt. 11. 27

36 * He that beleeveth on the Sonne, hath everlasting life: and he that beleeveth not the Sonne, shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

*Hab. 2. 4. 1. Joh. 5. 10.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ talketh with a woman of Samaria, and revealeth himself unto her. 27 His disciples marvell. 31 He declareth to them his zeal to Gods glory. 39 Many Samaritanes beleeve on him. 43 He departeth into Galilee, and healeth the rulers sonne that lay sick at Capernaum.

WHen therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized moe disciples then John,

2 (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples)

3 He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.

4 And he must needs go through Samaria.

5 Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, neare to the parcel of ground * that Jacob gave to his sonne Joseph.

*Gen. 33. 19. and 48. 22. Josh. 24. 32.

6 Now Jacobs well was there. Jesus therefore

800 fore being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth houre.

7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8 For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritanes.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himselfe, and his children, and his cattell?

13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.

19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain, and ye say, that in * Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

*Deut. 12. 5.

21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the houre cometh when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem worship the Father.

22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews.

23 But the houre cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

*2. Cor. 3. 17

24 * God is a Spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth.

25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things.

26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee, am he.

27 ¶ And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water-pot and went her way into the city, and saith to the men,

29 Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31 ¶ In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat?

34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.

35 Say not ye, There are yet foure moneths, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields: * for they are white already to harvest.

* Mat. 9 37.

36 And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternall: that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, may rejoyce together.

37 And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.

39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that city beleeved on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did.

40 So when the Samaritanes were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many more beleeved, because of his own word:

42 And said unto the woman, Now we beleeve, not because of thy saying, for we have heard him our selves, and know that this is indeed the Christ the Saviour of the world.

43 ¶ Now after two dayes he departed thence, and went into Galilee:

* Mat. 13. 57

44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country.

45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

46 So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, * where he made the water wine. And there was a certain ‖ noble man, whose sonne was sick at Capernaum.

*Chap. 2. 1.
‖ Or, courtier, or ruler.

47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his sonne: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleeve.

49 The noble man saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my childe die.

50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way, thy sonne liveth. And the man beleeved the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Thy sonne liveth.

52 Then enquired he of them the houre when he began to amend: and they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh houre the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the same houre, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy sonne liveth; and himself beleeved, and his whole house.

54 This is again the second miracle that Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 *Jesus on the sabbath-day cureth him that was diseased eight and thirty yeares.* 10 *The Jews therefore cavil, and persecute him for it.* 17 *He answereth for himself, and reproveth them, shewing by the testimony of his Father, 32 of John, 36 of his works, 39 and of the scriptures, who he is.*

AFter * this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

*Levit. 23. 2 Deut. 16.

2 Now

2 Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep-‖market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five porches.

‖ Or, gate.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blinde, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight yeares.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

10 ¶ The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day, * it is not lawfull for thee to carry thy bed.

* Jer. 17. 22.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk?

13 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, ‖ a multitude being in that place.

‖ Or, from the multitude that was.

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sinne no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath-day.

17 ¶ But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not onely had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equall with God.

19 Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, The Sonne can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doth, these also doth the Sonne likewise.

20 For the Father loveth the Sonne, and sheweth him all things that himself doth: and he will shew him greater works then these, that ye may marvell.

21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them: even so the Sonne quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man: but hath committed all judgement unto the Sonne:

23 That all men should honour the Sonne, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Sonne, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and beleeveth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death unto life.

25 Verily verily I say unto you, The houre is coming, and now is, when the dead shall heare the voice of the Sonne of God: and they that heare, shall live.

801

26 For as the Father hath life in himself: so hath he given to the Sonne to have life in himself:

27 And hath given him authoritie to execute judgement also, because he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marvell not at this: for the houre is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall heare his voice,

29 And shall come forth, * they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life, and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

* Matth. 25. 46.

30 I can of mine own self do nothing; as I heare, I judge: and my judgement is just, because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

31 * If I bear witnesse of my self, my witnesse is not true.

* Chap. 8. 14.

32 ¶ * There is another that beareth witnesse of me, and I know that the witnesse which he witnesseth of me, is true.

* Matt. 3. 17.

33 Ye sent unto John, * and he bare witnesse unto the truth.

* Chap. 1. 7

34 But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I have greater witnesse then that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witnesse of me, that the Father hath sent me.

37 And the Father himself which hath sent me, * hath born witnesse of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, * nor seen his shape.

* Matt. 3. 17. and 17. 5. * Deut. 4. 12.

38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye beleeve not.

39 ¶ Search the scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternall life, and they are they which testifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

41 I receive not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

44 * How can ye beleeve, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God onely?

* Chap. 12. 43.

45 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust.

46 For had ye beleeved Moses, ye would have beleeved me: * for he wrote of me.

* Gen. 3. 15. Deut. 18. 15.

47 But if ye beleeve not his writings, how shall ye beleeve my words?

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ feedeth five thousand men with five loaves, and two fishes. 15 Thereupon the people would have made him king. 16 But withdrawing himself, he walked on the sea to his disciples: 26 reproveth the people flocking after him, and all the fleshly hearers of his word: 32 declareth himself to be the bread of life to beleevers. 66 Many disciples depart from him. 68 Peter confesseth him. 70 Judas is a devil.

AFter these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias:

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

4 *And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.

5 ¶ *When Jesus then lift us his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat?

6 (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grasse in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

11 And Jesus took the loaves, and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down, and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above, unto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.

15 ¶ When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

16 *And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

17 And entred into a ship, and went over the sea towards Capernaum: and it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose, by reason of a great winde that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty, or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entred, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone:

23 (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks)

24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily verily I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

27 ‖ Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Sonne of man shall give unto you: *for him hath God the Father sealed.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, *This is the work of God, that ye beleeve on him whom he hath sent.

30 They said therefore unto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see, and beleeve thee? what doest thou work?

31 *Our fathers did eat manna in the desert, as it is written, *He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, & giveth life unto the world.

34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that beleeveth on me, shall never thirst.

36 But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and beleeve not.

37 All that the Father giveth me, shall come to me; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Sonne, and beleeveth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42 And they said, *Is not this Jesus the sonne of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmure not among your selves.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day.

45 *It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, *save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

47 Verily verily I say unto you, He that beleeveth on me hath everlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderneſſe, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give, is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove amongst themselves, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat?

53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily verily

I

*Levit. 23. 5. Deut. 16. 1.
*Matth. 14. 15.
*Matth. 14. 23.
‖ Or, work not.
*Matt. 3. 17.
*1. John 3. 23.
*Exod. 16. 15. Num. 11. 7. Psal 78. 25.
*Matt. 13. 55.
*Isa. 54. 13. Jer. 31. 34.
*Matt. 11. 27.

I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternall life, and I will raise him up at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so, he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.

58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread, shall live for ever.

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard this, said, This is an hard saying, who can heare it?

61 When Jesus knew in himself, that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you?

* Chap. 3. 13

62 * What and if ye shall see the Sonne of man ascend up where he was before?

63 It is the spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that believed not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternall life.

* Matt. 16. 16.

69 * And we believe, and are sure that thou art that Christ the Sonne of the living God.

70 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?

71 He spake of Judas Iscariot the sonne of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

1 Jesus reproveth the ambition and boldnesse of his kinsmen: 10 goeth up from Galilee to the feast of tabernacles: 14 teacheth in the temple. 40 Divers opinions of him among the people. 45 The Pharisees are angry that their officers took him not, and chide with Nicodemus for taking his part.

AFter these things, Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jury, because the Jews sought to kill him.

* Lev. 23. 34.

2 * Now the Jews feast of tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou dost.

4 For there is no man that doth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly: If thou do these things, shew thy self to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren believe in him.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the works thereof are evil.

8 Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, * for my time is not yet full come.

* Chap. 8. 20

9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay, but he deceiveth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

14 ¶ Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man || letters, having never learned?

|| Or, learning.

16 Jesus answered them, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of my self.

18 He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousnesse is in him.

19 * Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? * Why go ye about to kill me?

* Exod. 24. 3
* Chap. 5. 18

20 The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvell.

22 * Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers) and ye on the sabbath-day circumcise a man.

* Lev. 12. 3.
* Gen. 17. 10.

23 If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, || that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day?

|| Or, without breaking the law of Moses.

24 * Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

* Deut. 1. 16.

25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

26 But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him: do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am, and I am not come of my self, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do moe miracles then these which this man hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little

while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.

34 * Ye shall seek me, and shall not finde me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.

35 Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not finde him? will he go unto the dispersed among the || Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not finde me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come?

37 * In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

38 * He that beleeveth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.

39 (* But this spake he of the spirit, which they that beleeve on him, should receive: for the holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

42 * Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

43 So there was a division among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees, and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?

48 Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees beleeved on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.

50 Nicodemus saith unto them, (* he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them)

51 * Doth our law judge any man before it heare him, and know what he doth?

52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *Christ delivereth the woman taken in adultery.* 12 *He preacheth himself the light of the world, and justifieth his doctrine:* 33 *answereth the Jews that boasted of Abraham,* 59 *and conveyeth himself from their crueltie.*

JEsus went unto the mount of Olives:

2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him, and he sat down, and taught them.

3 And the Scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery, and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 * Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground as though he heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, he lift up himself, and said unto them, * He that is without sinne among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And again he stooped down and wrote on the ground.

9 And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Jesus had lift up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemne thee: go, and sinne no more.

12 ¶ Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, * I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walk in darknesse, but shall have the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thy self, thy record is not true.

14 Jesus answered and said unto them, * Though I bear record of my self, yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go.

15 Ye judge after the flesh, I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the father that sent me.

17 * It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true.

18 I am one that bear witnesse of my self, and the Father that sent me, beareth witnesse of me.

19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.

20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sinnes: whither I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.

23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from above: ye are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sinnes: for if ye beleeve not that I am he, ye shall die in your sinnes.

25 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning.

26 I have many things to say, and to judge of you: but he that sent me, is true: & I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him.

27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lift up the Sonne of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of my self: but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone: for I do always those things that please him.

30 As he spake these words, many beleeved on him.

31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which beleeved on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed.

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 ¶ They

* Chap. 13. 33.
‖ Or, Greeks.
* Lev. 23. 36.
* Deut. 18. 15
* Isa. 44. 3. Joel 2. 28.
* Matt. 2. 5.
* Chap. 3. 2.
* Deut. 17. 8, &c. and 19. 15.
* Lev. 20. 10.
* Deut. 17. 7.
* Chap. 1. 5. and 9. 5.
* Chap. 5. 31
* Deut. 17. 6. Matt. 18. 16.

33 ¶ They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Jesus answered them, Verily verily I say unto you, * Whosoever committeth sinne, is the servant of sinne.

* Rom. 6. 20. 2. Pet. 2. 19.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Sonne abideth ever.

36 If the Sonne therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed, but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication, we have one Father, even God.

42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me, for I proceeded forth, and came from God; neither came I of my self, but he sent me.

43 Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot heare my word.

44 * Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.

* 1. John 3. 8

45 And because I tell you the truth, ye beleeve me not.

46 Which of you convinceth me of sinne? And if I say the truth, why do ye not beleeve me?

47 * He that is of God, heareth Gods words: ye therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God.

* 1. John 4. 6

48 Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane, and hast a devil?

49 Jesus answered, I have not a devil: but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

50 And I seek not mine own glory, there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51 Verily verily I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

52 Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets, and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thy self?

54 Jesus answered, If I honour my self, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God:

55 Yet ye have not known him, but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

56 Your father Abraham rejoyced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty yeares old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them, Verily verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

1 The man that was born blinde restored to sight. 8 He is brought to the Pharisees. 13 They are offended at it, and excommunicate him: 35 but he is received of Jesus, and confesseth him. 39 Who they are whom Christ enlighteneth.

AND as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this man, or his parents, that he was born blinde?

3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh when no man can work.

5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world.

* Chap. 1. 9.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he ‖ anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay,

‖ *Or*, spread the clay upon the eyes of the blinde man.

7 And said unto him, Go wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 ¶ The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him, that he was blinde, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?

9 Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blinde.

14 And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, do such miracles? and there was a division among them.

17 They say unto the blinde man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not beleeve concerning him, that he had been blinde, and received his sight, untill they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your sonne, who ye say was born blinde? how then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our sonne, and that he was born blinde:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes we know not: he is of age, ask him, he shall speak for himself.

806

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.
23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age, ask him.
24 Then again called they the man that was blinde, and said unto him, Give God the praise, we know that this man is a sinner.
25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blinde, now I see.
26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?
27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not heare: wherefore would ye heare it again? will ye also be his disciples?
28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses disciples.
29 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.
30 The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.
31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doth his will, him he heareth.
32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blinde.
33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.
34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sinnes, and dost thou teach us? And they ‖ cast him out.
35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou beleeve on the Sonne of God?
36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleeve on him?
37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.
38 And he said, Lord, I beleeve: and he worshipped him.
39 ¶ And Jesus said, For judgement I am come into this world, that they which see not, might see; and that they which see, might be made blinde.
40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blinde also?
41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blinde, ye should have no sinne: but now ye say, We see: therefore your sinne remaineth.

‖ *Or*, excommunicated him.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ is the doore, and the good shepherd. 19 Divers opinions of him. 24 He proveth by his works, that he is Christ the Sonne of God: 39 escapeth the Jews, 40 and went again beyond Jordan, where many beleeved on him.

VErily verily I say unto you, He that entreth not by the doore into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.
2 But he that entreth in by the doore, is the shepherd of the sheep.
3 To him the porter openeth: and the sheep heare his voice, and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.
4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.
5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.
6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.
7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily verily I say unto you, I am the doore of the sheep.
8 All that ever came before me, are theeves and robbers; but the sheep did not heare them.
9 I am the doore, by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and finde pasture.
10 The thiefe cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.
11 * I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. * Isa. 40.11. Ezek. 34.23.
12 But he that is an hireling and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.
13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.
14 I am the good shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.
15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.
16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall heare my voice; * and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. * Ezek. 37.22.
17 Therefore doth my Father love me, * because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. * Isa. 53.7,8.
18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of my self: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. * This commandment have I received of my Father. * Acts 2.24.
19 ¶ There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.
20 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad, why heare ye him?
21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil: can a devil open the eyes of the blinde?
22 ¶ And it was at Jerusalem the * feast of the dedication, and it was winter. * 1. Mac. 4.59.
23 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomons porch.
24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou ‖ make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. ‖ *Or*, hold us in suspense.
25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye beleeved not: the works that I do in my Fathers name, they bear witnesse of me.
26 But ye beleeve not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.
27 My sheep heare my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.
28 And I give unto them eternall life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.
29 My Father which gave them me, is greater then all: and no man is able to pluck them out of my Fathers hand.
30 I and my Father are one.
31 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.
32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?
33 The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy, and

and becauſe that thou, being a man, makeſt thy ſelf God.

* Pſal 82.6. 34 Jeſus anſwered them, * Is it not written in your law, I ſaid, Ye are gods?

35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the ſcripture cannot be broken:

36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath ſanctified, and ſent into the world, Thou blaſphemeſt, becauſe I ſaid, I am the Sonne of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, beleeve me not.

38 But if I do, though ye beleeve not me, beleeve the works: that ye may know and beleeve that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they ſought again to take him: but he eſcaped out of their hand,

40 And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at firſt baptized, and there he abode.

41 And many reſorted unto him, and ſaid, John did no miracle: but all things that John ſpake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleeved on him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 Chriſt raiſeth Lazarus foure dayes buried. 45 Many Jews beleeve. 47 The high prieſts and Phariſees gather a councel againſt Chriſt. 49 Caiaphas propheſieth. 54 Jeſus hid himſelf. 55 At the paſſeover they enquire after him, and lay wait for him.

NOw a certain man was ſick, named Lazarus of Bethanie, the town of Mary and her ſiſter Martha.

* Matth. 26. 7. 2 (* It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whoſe brother Lazarus was ſick)

3 Therefore his ſiſters ſent unto him, ſaying, Lord, behold, he whom thou loveſt, is ſick.

4 When Jeſus heard that, he ſaid, This ſickneſſe is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jeſus loved Martha, and her ſiſter, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was ſick, he abode two dayes ſtill in the ſame place where he was.

7 Then after that ſaith he to his diſciples, Let us go into Judea again.

8 His diſciples ſay unto him, Maſter, the Jews of late ſought to ſtone thee, and goeſt thou thither again?

9 Jeſus anſwered, Are there not twelve houres in the day? If any man walk in the day, he ſtumbleth not, becauſe he ſeeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walk in the night, he ſtumbleth, becauſe there is no light in him.

11 Theſe things ſaid he, and after that, he ſaith unto them, Our friend Lazarus ſleepeth, but I go that I may awake him out of ſleep.

12 Then ſaid his diſciples, Lord, if he ſleep, he ſhall do well.

13 Howbeit Jeſus ſpake of his death: but they thought that he had ſpoken of taking of reſt in ſleep.

14 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your ſakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may beleeve) nevertheleſſe, let us go unto him.

16 Then ſaid Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow diſciples, Let us alſo go, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jeſus came, he found that he had lien in the grave foure dayes already.

18 (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jeruſalem, about fifteen furlongs off.)

‖ That is, about two miles.

19 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, aſſoon as ſhe heard that Jeſus was coming, went and met him: but Mary ſat ſtill in the houſe.

21 Then ſaid Martha unto Jeſus, Lord, if thou hadſt been here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know, that even now whatſoever thou wilt aſk of God, God will give it thee.

23 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Thy brother ſhall riſe again.

* Luke 14. 14. Chap. 5. 29. * Chap. 6. 35. 24 Martha ſaith unto him, * I know that he ſhall riſe again in the reſurrection at the laſt day.

25 Jeſus ſaid unto her, I am the reſurrection and the * life: he that beleeveth in me, though he were dead, yet ſhall he live;

26 And whoſoever liveth, and beleeveth in me, ſhall never die. Beleeveſt thou this?

27 She ſaith unto him, Yea, Lord, I beleeve that thou art the Chriſt the Sonne of God which ſhould come into the world.

28 And when ſhe had ſo ſaid, ſhe went her way, and called Mary her ſiſter ſecretly, ſaying, The Maſter is come and calleth for thee.

29 Aſſoon as ſhe heard that, ſhe aroſe quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jeſus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Jews then which were with her in the houſe, and comforted her, when they ſaw Mary that ſhe roſe up haſtily, and went out, followed her, ſaying, She goeth unto the grave, to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jeſus was, and ſaw him, ſhe fell down at his feet, ſaying unto him, Lord, if thou hadſt been here, my brother had not died.

33 When Jeſus therefore ſaw her weeping, and the Jews alſo weeping which came with her, he groned in the ſpirit, and † was troubled,

† Gr. he troubled himſelf.

34 And ſaid, Where have ye laid him? They ſay unto him, Lord, come and ſee.

35 Jeſus wept.

36 Then ſaid the Jews, Behold how he loved him.

* Chap. 9. 6. 37 And ſome of them ſaid, Could not this man, * which opened the eyes of the blinde, have cauſed that even this man ſhould not have died?

38 Jeſus therefore again groning in himſelf, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a ſtone lay upon it.

39 Jeſus ſaid, Take ye away the ſtone. Martha, the ſiſter of him that was dead, ſaith unto him, Lord, by this time he ſtinketh: for he hath been dead foure dayes.

40 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldeſt beleeve, thou ſhouldeſt ſee the glory of God?

41 Then they took away the ſtone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jeſus lift up his eyes, and ſaid, Father, I thank thee that thou haſt heard me.

42 And I knew that thou heareſt me always: but becauſe of the people which ſtand by, I ſaid it, that they may beleeve that thou haſt ſent me.

43 And when he thus had ſpoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus come forth.

44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes: and his face

808

was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, beleeved on him.

46 But some of them went their wayes to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a councel, and said, What do we? for this man doth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleeve on him; and the Romanes shall come and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same yeare, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all,

* Chap. 18. 14. 50 * Nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

51 And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that yeare, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation;

52 And not for that nation onely, but that also he should gather together in one, the children of God that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth, they took counsel together for to put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews: but went thence unto a country neare to the wildernesse, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Jews passeover was nigh at hand, and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passeover, to purifie themselves.

56 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Jesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flock to see Lazarus. 10 The high priests consult to kill him. 12 Christ rideth into Jerusalem. 20 Greeks desire to see Jesus. 23 He foretelleth his death. 37 The Jews are generally blinded: 42 yet many chief rulers beleeve, but do not confesse him: 44 therefore Jesus calleth earnestly for confession of faith.

THen Jesus, six dayes before the passeover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment, of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simons sonne, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poore?

* Chap. 13. 29. 6 This he said, not that he cared for the poore: but because he was a thief, and * had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poore always ye have with you: but me ye have not always.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus sake onely, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chief priests consulted, that they might put Lazarus also to death:

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and beleeved on Jesus.

* Matth. 21. 8. 12 ¶ * On the next day, much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

13 Took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hosanna, blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

14 And Jesus when he had found a young asse, sat thereon, as it is written,

* Zech. 9. 9. 15 * Fear not, daughter of Sion, behold thy King cometh sitting on an asses colt.

16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembred they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip told Jesus.

23 ¶ And Jesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the Sonne of man should be glorified.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

* Matth. 10. 39. 25 * He that loveth his life, shall lose it: and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternall.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me, and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my soul troubled, and what shall I say? Father, save me from this houre: but for this cause came I unto this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorifie it again.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundred: others said, An angel spake to him.

30 Jesus answered, and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the judgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

33 (This he said, signifying what death he should die)

* Psal. 110. 4. 34 The people answered him, * We have heard out of the law, that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Sonne of man must be lift up? who is this Sonne of man?

35 Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you, walk while ye have the light, lest darknesse come upon you: for he that

that walketh in darkneſſe, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye have light, beleeve in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things ſpake Jeſus and departed, and did hide himſelf from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done ſo many miracles before them, yet they beleeved not on him:

38 That the ſaying of Eſaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he ſpake, *Lord, who hath beleeved our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

39 Therefore they could not beleeve, becauſe that Eſaias ſaid again,

40 *He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they ſhould not ſee with their eyes, nor underſtand with their heart, and be converted, and I ſhould heal them.

41 These things ſaid Eſaias, when he ſaw his glory, and ſpake of him.

42 ¶ Nevertheleſſe, among the chiefe rulers alſo, many beleeved on him; but becauſe of the Phariſees they did not confeſſe him, leſt they ſhould be put out of the ſynagogue.

43 *For they loved the praiſe of men more then the praiſe of God.

44 ¶ Jeſus cried, and ſaid, He that beleeveth on me, beleeveth not on me, but on him that ſent me.

45 And he that ſeeth me, ſeeth him that ſent me.

46 *I am come a light into the world, that whoſoever beleeveth on me, ſhould not abide in darkneſſe.

47 *And if any man heare my words and beleeve not, I judge him not; for I came not to judge the world, but to ſave the world.

48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: *the word that I have ſpoken, the ſame ſhall judge him in the laſt day.

49 For I have not ſpoken of my ſelf; but the Father which ſent me, he gave me a commandment what I ſhould ſay, & what I ſhould ſpeak.

50 And I know that his commandment is life everlaſting: whatſoever I ſpeak therefore, even as the Father ſaid unto me, ſo I ſpeak.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Jeſus waſheth the diſciples feet: exhorteth them to humility and charity. 18 He foretelleth and diſcovereth to John by a token, that Judas ſhould betray him: 31 commandeth them to love one another: 36 and forewarneth Peter of his deniall.

NOw *before the feaſt of the paſſeover, when Jeſus knew that his houre was come, that he ſhould depart out of this world, unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

2 And ſupper being ended, (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iſcariot, Simons ſonne, to betray him)

3 Jeſus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God,

4 He riſeth from ſupper, and laid aſide his garments, and took a towell, and girded himſelf.

5 After that, he poureth water into a baſon, and began to waſh the diſciples feet, and to wipe them with the towell wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter ſaith unto him, Lord, doſt thou waſh my feet?

7 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, What I do thou knoweſt not now: but thou ſhalt know hereafter.

8 Peter ſaith unto him, Thou ſhalt never waſh my feet. Jeſus anſwered him, If I waſh thee not, thou haſt no part with me.

9 Simon Peter ſaith unto him, Lord, not my feet onely, but alſo my hands and my head.

10 Jeſus ſaith to him, He that is waſhed, needeth not, ſave to waſh his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all.

11 For he knew who ſhould betray him, therefore ſaid he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So after he had waſhed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was ſet down again: he ſaid unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?

13 Ye call me Maſter, and Lord: and ye ſay well; for ſo I am.

14 If I then your Lord & Maſter have waſhed your feet, ye alſo ought to waſh one anothers feet.

15 For I have given you an example, that ye ſhould do as I have done to you.

16 *Verily verily I ſay unto you, The ſervant is not greater then his Lord, neither he that is ſent, greater then he that ſent him.

17 If ye know theſe things, happy are ye if ye do them.

18 ¶ I ſpeak not of you all, I know whom I have choſen: but that the ſcripture may be fulfilled, *He that eateth bread with me, hath lift up his heel againſt me.

19 ‖ Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to paſſe, ye may beleeve that I am he.

20 *Verily verily I ſay unto you, He that receiveth whomſoever I ſend, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that ſent me.

21 *When Jeſus had thus ſaid, he was troubled in ſpirit, and teſtified, and ſaid, Verily verily I ſay unto you, that one of you ſhall betray me.

22 Then the diſciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he ſpake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jeſus boſome, one of his diſciples whom Jeſus loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckened to him, that he ſhould aſk who it ſhould be of whom he ſpake.

25 He then lying on Jeſus breaſt, ſaith unto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Jeſus anſwered, He it is to whom I ſhall give a ‖ ſop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the ſop, he gave it to Judas Iſcariot the ſonne of Simon.

27 And after the ſop, Satan entred into him. Then ſaid Jeſus unto him, That thou doeſt, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he ſpake this unto him.

29 For ſome of them thought, becauſe Judas had the bagge, that Jeſus had ſaid unto him, Buy thoſe things that we have need of againſt the feaſt: or that he ſhould give ſomething to the poore.

30 He then having received the ſop, went immediately out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when he was gone out, Jeſus ſaid, Now is the Sonne of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God ſhall alſo glorifie him in himſelf, and ſhall ſtraightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you, Ye ſhall ſeek me, *and as I ſaid unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; ſo now I ſay unto you.

34 *A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another, as I have loved you, that ye alſo love one another.

35 By this ſhall all men know that ye are my diſciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 ¶ Simon

809

* Iſa. 53. 1. Rom. 10. 16.
* Matth. 13. 14.
*Chap. 5. 44.
*Chap. 3. 19.
* Chap. 3. 17.
* Mark 16. 16.
* Matt. 26. 2.
* Matth. 10. 24. Chap. 15. 20.
* Pſal. 41. 9.
‖ Or, from henceforth.
* Matth. 10. 40.
* Matth. 26. 21.
‖ Or, morſel.
* Chap. 7. 34.
* Lev. 19. 18. Chap. 15. 17. 1. John 4. 21.

810

36 ¶ Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will * lay down my life for thy sake.

* Matth. 26. 33.

38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily verily I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow till thou hast denied me thrice.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples with the hope of heaven: 6 professeth himself the way, the truth, and the life, and one with the Father: 13 assureth their prayers in his name to be effectuall: 15 requesteth love and obedience: 16 promiseth the holy Ghost the Comforter: 27 and leaveth his peace with them.

LEt not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you: I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto my self, that where I am, there ye may be also.

4 And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest: and how can we know the way?

6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father but by me.

7 If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me, hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?

10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you, I speak not of my self: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doth the works.

11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works sake.

12 Verily verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do, shall he do also, and greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto my Father.

* Matt. 7. 7.

13 * And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne.

14 If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do it.

15 ¶ If ye love me, keep my commandments.

16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever;

17 Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

‖ Or, orphanes.

18 I will not leave you ‖ comfortless, I will come to you.

19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more: but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.

20 At that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me; and he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest my self to him.

22 Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy self unto us, and not unto the world?

23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which you heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you, not as the world giveth, give I unto you: let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoyce, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater then I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to passe, that when it is come to passe, ye might believe.

30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.

31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do: arise, let us go hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 The consolation and mutuall love between Christ and his members, under the parable of the vine. 18 A comfort in the hatred and persecution of the world. 26 The office of the holy Ghost, and of the apostles.

I Am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

2 * Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

* Matt. 15. 13.

3 * Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

* Chap. 13. 10.

4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for ‖ without me ye can do nothing.

‖ Or, severed from me.

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.

8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love: even as I have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love.

11 These

11 These things have I spoken unto you that my joy might remain in you, and that your joy might be full.

* Chap. 13. 34. 1. Thess. 4. 9. 1. John 3. 11.

12 * This is my commandment, that ye love one another, as I have loved you.

13 Greater love hath no man then this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not servants, for the servant knoweth not what his lord doth, but I have called you friends: for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you.

* Matt. 28. 19.

16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and * ordained you, that you should go and bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

* Matth. 10. 24. Chap. 13. 16.

20 * Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater then the lord: if they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also.

21 But all these things will they do unto you for my names sake, because they know not him that sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sinne: but now they have no ‖ cloke for their sinne.

‖ *Or*, excuse.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sinne: but now have they both seen, and hated both me and my Father.

25 But this cometh to passe, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, * They hated me without a cause.

* Psal. 35. 19 * Luke 24. 49. Chap. 14. 26

26 * But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testifie of me.

27 And ye also shall bear witnesse, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples against tribulation by the promise of the holy Ghost, and by his resurrection and ascension; 23 assureth their prayers made in his name to be acceptable to his Father. 33 Peace in Christ, and in the world affliction.

THese things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doth God service.

3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Nevertheless, I tell you the truth, it is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you: but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

8 And when he is come, he will ‖ reprove the world of sinne, and of righteousnesse, and of judgement.

‖ *Or*, convince.

9 Of sinne, because they beleeve not on me.

10 Of righteousnesse, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more.

11 Of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.

13 Howbeit, when he the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself: but whatsoever he shall heare, that shall he speak, and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

16 A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

17 Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among your selves of that I said, A little while and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while and ye shall see me?

20 Verily verily I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoyce: and ye shall be sorrowfull, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

21 A woman when she is in travail, hath sorrow, because her houre is come: but assoon as she is delivered of the childe, she remembreth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

22 And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoyce, and your joy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing: * Verily verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give it you.

* Matth. 7. 7

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in ‖ proverbs: the time cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in ‖ proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

‖ *Or*, parables. ‖ *Or*, parables.

26 At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have beleeved that I came out from God.

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no ‖ proverb.

‖ *Or*, parable

30 Now

812

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we beleeve that thou camest forth from God.

31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now beleeve?

* Matt. 26. 31. 32 * Behold, the houre cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to ‖ his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

‖ Or, his own home. 33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him: 6 to preserve his apostles 11 in unity, 17 and truth: 20 to glorifie them, and all other beleevers with him in heaven.

THese words spake Jesus and lift up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the houre is come, glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee.

* Matth. 28. 18. 2 * As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternall life to as many as thou hast given him.

3 And this is life eternall, that they might know thee the onely true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

6 I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me, are of thee.

8 For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me, and they have received them, * and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have beleeved that thou didst send me.

* Chap. 16. 27. 9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name, those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.

12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the sonne of perdition: * that the scripture might be fulfilled.

* Psal. 109. 8 13 And now come I to thee: and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

14 I have given them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy truth, thy word is truth.

18 As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie my self, that they also might be ‖ sanctified through the truth.

‖ Or, truely sanctified. 20 Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall beleeve on me through their word.

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may beleeve that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them: that they may be one, even as we are one.

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

* Chap. 12. 26. 24 * Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee, but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Judas betrayeth Jesus. 6 The officers fall to the ground. 10 Peter smiteth off Malchus eare. 12 Jesus is taken and led unto Annas and Caiaphas. 15 Peters deniall. 19 Jesus examined before Caiaphas. 28 His arraignment before Pilate. 36 His kingdome. 40 The Jews ask Barabbas to be let loose.

WHen Jesus had spoken these words, * he went forth with his disciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples.

* Matth. 26. 36. 2 And Judas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

* Matt. 26. 47. 3 * Judas then having received a band of men, and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons.

4 Jesus therefore knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye?

5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 Assoon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? and they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

8 Jesus answered, I have told you that I am he. If therefore ye seek me, let these go their way,

* Chap. 17. 12. 9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, * Of them which thou gavest me, have I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a sword, drew it, and smote the high priests servant, and cut off his right eare: the servants name was Malchus.

‖ And Annas sent Christ bound unto Caiaphas the high priest, verse 24. 11 Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

12 Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him,

13 And led him away to Annas first (for he was father in law to Caiaphas) which was the high priest that same yeare. ‖

14 * Now

14 * Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

* Chap. 11. 50.

15 ¶ * And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple: that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest.

* Matt. 26. 58.

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damsel that kept the doore, unto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He saith, I am not.

18 And the servants and officers stood there, who had made a fire of coals, (for it was cold) and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself.

19 ¶ The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world, I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews allwayes resort, and in secret have I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, stroke Jesus ‖ with the palme of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so?

‖ *Or*, with a rod.

23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witnesse of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

24 * Now Annas had sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.

* Matth. 26. 57.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself: * They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one of his disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not.

* Matt. 26. 69.

26 One of the servants of the high priest (being his kinsman whose eare Peter cut off) saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied again, and immediately the cock crew.

28 ¶ * Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas, unto ‖ the hall of judgement: and it was early, * and they themselves went not into the judgement hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eat the passeover.

* Matt. 27. 2.
‖ *Or*, Pilates house.
* Acts 10. 28

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactour, we would not have delivered him up unto thee.

31 Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawfull for us to put any man to death:

32 * That the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

* Matt. 20. 19.

33 * Then Pilate entred into the judgement hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the king of the Jews?

* Matt. 27. 11.

34 Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thy self, or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? thine own nation, and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me: What hast thou done?

36 Jesus answered, My kingdome is not of this world: if my kingdome were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witnesse unto the truth: every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.

38 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

39 * But ye have a custome, that I should release unto you one at the passeover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the king of the Jews?

* Matth. 27. 15.

40 * Then cried they all again, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

* Acts 3. 14.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Christ is scourged, crowned with thorns, and beaten. 4 Pilate is desirous to release him; but being overcome with the outrage of the Jews, he delivered him to be crucified. 23 They cast lots for his garments. 26 He commendeth his mother to John. 28 He dieth. 31 His side is pierced. 38 He is buried by Joseph and Nicodemus.

THen * Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him.

* Matt. 27. 26.

2 And the souldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Hail king of the Jews: and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe: and Pilate saith unto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid;

9 And went again into the judgement hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? but Jesus gave him no answer.

10 Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucifie thee, and have power to release thee?

11 Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power at all against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sinne.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cesars friend: whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgement seat, in a place that is called the pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the passeover, and about the sixth houre: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your king.

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucifie your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cesar.

16 * Then

814

16 * Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified: and they took Jesus and led him away.
17 And he bearing his crosse, went forth into a place called the place of a scull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha.
18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, & Jesus in the midst.
19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the crosse: and the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE IEWS.
20 This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the citie, and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latine.
21 Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Jews, but that he said, I am king of the Jews.
22 Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.
23 ¶ * Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments (and made foure parts, to every souldier a part) and also his coat: now the coat was without seam, || woven from the top throughout.
24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: * that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.
25 ¶ Now there stood by the crosse of Jesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary the wife of || Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.
26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy sonne.
27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that houre that disciple took her unto his own home.
28 ¶ After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, * that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.
29 Now there was set a vessel full of vineger: and they filled a spunge with vineger, and put it upon hyssope, and put it to his mouth.
30 When Jesus therefore had received the vineger, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.
31 The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation that the bodies should not remain upon the crosse on the sabbath-day (for that sabbath-day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away.
32 Then came the souldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.
33 But when they came to Jesus, & saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.
34 But one of the souldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.
35 And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe.
36 For these things were done, * that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken.
37 * And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.
38 ¶ * And after this, Joseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews) besought Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave him leave: he came therefore and took the body of Jesus.
39 And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound weight.
40 Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.
41 Now in the place where he was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.
42 There laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews preparation day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

* Matt. 27. 31.
* Matt. 27. 35.
|| Or, wrought
* Psal. 22. 18
|| Or, Clopas.
* Psal. 69. 21
* Exod. 12. 46. Num. 9. 12. Psal. 34. 20.
* Zech. 12. 10.
* Matt. 27. 57.

CHAP. XX.

1 Mary cometh to the sepulchre: 3 so do Peter and John, ignorant of the resurrection. 11 Jesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his disciples. 24 The incredulity and confession of Thomas. 30 The scripture is sufficient to salvation.

THE * first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre.
2 Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the * other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.
3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.
4 So they ran both together, and the other disciple did outrunne Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.
5 And he stouping down, and looking in, saw the linen clothes lying, yet went he not in.
6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie,
7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it self.
8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw and beleeved.
9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.
10 Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.
11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre, weeping: and as she wept, she stouped down, and looked into the sepulchre,
12 And seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had layen.
13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.
14 And when she had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.
15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? she supposing him to be the gardiner, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have born him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.
16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary: She turned her self, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.
17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father.

* Matt. 28. 1. Mark 16. 1.
* Chap. 13. 23. and 21. 20.

ther, and your Father; and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

19 ¶ * Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doores were shut, where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iews, came Iesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Iesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the holy Ghost.

23 * Whose soever sinnes ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sinnes ye retain, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord: but he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleeve.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Iesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but beleeving.

28 And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord, and my God.

29 Iesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast beleeved: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have beleeved.

30 ¶ * And many other signes truely did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book.

31 But these are written, that ye might beleeve that Iesus is the Christ the Sonne of God, and that beleeving ye might have life through his name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *Christ appearing again to his disciples, was known of them by the great draught of fishes.* 12 *He dineth with them:* 15 *earnestly commandeth Peter to feed his lambes and sheep:* 18 *foretelleth him of his death:* 22 *rebuketh his curiositie touching John.* 25 *The conclusion.*

AFter these things Iesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and on this wise shewed he himself:

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sonnes of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entred into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Iesus.

5 Then Iesus saith unto them, ‖ Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No.

6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall finde. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Iesus loved, saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fisher's coat unto him, (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not farre from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

9 Assoon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish, which ye have now caught.

11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus saith unto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Iesus then cometh and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon sonne of Jonas, lovest thou me more then these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambes.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon sonne of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

17 He said unto him the third time, Simon sonne of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved, because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I love thee. Iesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily verily I say unto thee, when thou wast young, thou girdedst thy self, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple * whom Iesus loved, following, which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Iesus, Lord, and what shall this man do?

22 Iesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Iesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimony is true.

25 * And there are also many other things which Iesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the bookes that should be written. Amen.

The

* Mark 16. 14.

* Matth. 18. 18.

* Chap. 21. 25.

‖ Or, Sirs.

* Chap. 13. 23. and 20. 2.

* Chap. 20. 30.

The Acts of the APOSTLES.

CHAP. I.

1 Christ preparing his apostles to the beholding of his ascension, gathereth them together into the mount Olivet, commandeth them to expect in Jerusalem the sending down of the holy Ghost, promiseth after few dayes to send it: by vertue whereof they should be witnesses unto him, even to the utmost parts of the earth. 9 After his ascension they are warned by two angels to depart, and to set their mindes upon his second coming. 12 They accordingly return, and giving themselves to prayer, choose Matthias apostle in the place of Judas.

THE former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach,

2 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them fourty dayes, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdome of God:

4 And ‖ being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, * which, saith he, ye have heard of me.

5 * For John truely baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost, not many dayes hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power.

8 * But ye shall receive ‖ power after that the holy Ghost is come upon you, and ye shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

9 * And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparell,

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come, in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

12 Then returned they unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath-dayes journey.

13 And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the sonne of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer, and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of the names together were about an hundred and twenty)

16 Men and brethren, This scripture must needs have been fulfilled, * which the holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus.

17 For he was numbred with us, and had obtained part of this ministery.

18 * Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity, and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem, insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.

20 * For it is written in the book of psalmes, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: * And his ‖ bishoprick let another take.

21 Wherefore of these men which have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

22 Beginning from the baptisme of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witnesse with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take part of this ministery and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

26 And they gave forth their lots, and the lot fell upon Matthias, and he was numbred with the eleven apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 The apostles filled with the holy Ghost, and speaking divers languages, are admired by some, and derided by others. 14 Whom Peter disproving, and shewing that the apostles spake by the power of the holy Ghost, that Jesus was risen from the dead, ascended into heaven, had poured down the same holy Ghost, and was the Messias, a man known to them to be approved of God by his miracles, wonders and signes, and not crucified without his determinate counsel, and foreknowledge: 37 he baptizeth a great number that were converted, 41 who afterwards devoutly and charitably converse together: the apostles working many miracles, and God daily increasing his church.

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And

‖ *Or*, eating together with them.
* Luke 24. 49.
* Matth. 3. 11.
* Chap. 2. 1.
‖ *Or*, the power of the holy Ghost coming upon you.
* Luke 24. 51.
* Psal. 41. 9.
* Matt. 27. 7.
* Psal. 69. 25.
* Psal. 109. 8.
‖ *Or*, office, or, charge.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty winde, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.
3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them:
4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.
5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.
† Gr. when this voice was made. ‖ Or, troubled in minde.
6 Now † when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were ‖ confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.
7 And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak, Galileans?
8 And how heare we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?
9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Asia,
10 Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt and in the parts of Libya, about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes,
11 Cretes and Arabians, we do heare them speak in our tongues the wonderfull works of God.
12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?
13 Others mocking, said, These men are full of new wine.
14 ¶ But Peter standing up with the eleven, lift up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words:
15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third houre of the day.
*Isa. 44.3. Joel 2.28.
16 * But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel,
17 And it shall come to passe in the last dayes, (saith God) I will poure out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sonnes and your daughters shall prophesie, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams:
18 And on my servants, and on my handmaidens I will poure out in those dayes of my Spirit, and they shall prophesie:
19 And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signes in the earth beneath: blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke.
* Joel 2.31.
20 * The sunne shall be turned into darkenesse, and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.
*Rom. 10.13
21 * And it shall come to passe, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord, shall be saved.
22 Ye men of Israel, heare these words, Jesus of Nazareth a man approved of God among you, by miracles, wonders and signes, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye your selves also know:
23 Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain:
24 Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the paines of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.
*Psal. 16.8.
25 For David speaketh concerning him, * I foresaw the Lord alwayes before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved.
26 Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad: moreover also, my flesh shall rest in hope.
27 Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy one to see corruption.
28 Thou hast made known to me the wayes of life, thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.
‖ Or, I may. *1. Kin. 2.10
29 Men and brethren, ‖ let me freely speak unto you * of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day:
*Psal. 132.11
30 Therefore being a prophet, * and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loyns, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ, to sit on his throne:
*Psal. 16.10
31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, * that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption.
32 This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.
33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and heare.
*Psal. 110.1
34 For David is not ascended into the heavens, but he saith himself, * The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,
35 Until I make thy foes thy footstool.
36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.
37 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter, and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?
38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sinnes; and ye shall receive the gift of the holy Ghost.
39 For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.
40 And with many other words did he testifie and exhort, saying, Save your selves from this untoward generation.
41 ¶ Then they that gladly received his word, were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.
42 And they continued stedfastly in the apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.
43 And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signes were done by the apostles.
44 And all that beleeved were together, and had all things common,
45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.
46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread ‖ from house to house, did eat their meat with gladnesse and singlenesse of heart,
‖ Or, at home.
47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter preaching to the people that came to see a lame man restored to his feet, 12 professeth the cure not to have been wrought by his, or Johns own power, or holinesse, but by God, and his Sonne Jesus, and through faith in his name: 13 withall reprehending them for crucifying Jesus. 17 Which because they did it through ignorance, and that thereby were fulfilled Gods determinate counsel, and the scriptures, 19 he exhorteth them by repentance and faith to seek remission of their sinnes, and salvation in the same Jesus.

NOw Peter and John went up together into the temple, at the houre of prayer, being the ninth houre.

2 And a certain man lame from his mothers wombe was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautifull, to ask almes of them that entred into the temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an almes.

4 And Peter fastening his eyes upon him, with John, said, Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them.

6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none, but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lift him up, and immediately his feet and ancle-bones received strength.

8 And he leaping up, stood, and walked, and entred with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walking and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was he which sat for almes at the Beautifull gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomons, greatly wondering.

12 ¶ And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvell ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holinesse we had made this man to walk?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Jesus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go.

14 * But ye denied the holy one, and the just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you,

15 And killed the ‖ prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his name through faith in his name hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea the faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundnesse in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore and be converted, that your sinnes may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:

21 Whom the heaven must receive, untill the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

22 * For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you, of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye heare in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

23 And it shall come to passe, that every soul which will not heare that prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, * saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

26 Unto you first, God having raised up his Sonne Jesus, sent him to blesse you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The rulers of the Jews offended with Peters sermon, 4 (though thousands of the people were converted that heard the word) imprison him and John. 5 After, upon examination, Peter boldly avouching the lame man to be healed by the name of Jesus, and that by the same Jesus onely we must be eternally saved, 13 they command him and John to preach no more in that name, adding also threatning. 23 Whereupon the church fleeth to prayer: 31 and God by moving the place where they were assembled, testified that he heard their prayer, confirming the church with the gift of the holy Ghost, and with mutuall love and charity.

AND as they spake unto the people, the priests and the ‖ captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came upon them,

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now eventide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the word believed, and the number of the men was about five thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and Scribes,

6 And Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the midst, they asked, By what power, or by what name have ye done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy Ghost, said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole,

10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised

from

*Deut. 18. 15. Chap. 7. 37.

*Gen. 12. 3.

*Mat. 27. 20.

‖ Or, author.

‖ Or, ruler.

from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

*Psal.118.22. Matt.21.42. 11 * This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved.

13 ¶ Now when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled, and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the councel, they conferred among themselves,

16 Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it.

17 But that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to no man in this name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all, nor teach in the name of Jesus.

19 But Peter and John answered and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken unto you more then unto God, judge ye.

20 For we cannot but speak the things which we have seen and heard.

21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was above fourty yeares old, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 ¶ And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lift up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God which hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is.

*Psal.2.1. 25 * Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things?

26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a truth against thy holy childe Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together,

28 For to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

29 And now Lord, behold their threatnings: and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldnesse they may speak thy word,

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heal: and that signes and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy childe Jesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldnesse.

32 And the multitude of them that believed, were of one heart, and of one soul: neither said any of them, that ought of the things which he possessed, was his own; but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gave the apostles witnesse of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and great grace was upon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessours of lands or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid them down at the apostles feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

36 And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is, being interpreted, The sonne of consolation) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus,

37 Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles feet.

CHAP. V.

After that Ananias and Sapphira his wife for their hypocrisie at Peters rebuke had fallen down dead, 12 and that the rest of the apostles had wrought many miracles, 14 to the increase of the faith: 17 the apostles are again imprisoned, 19 but delivered by an angel, bidding them to preach openly to all: 21 When, after their teaching accordingly in the temple, 29 and before the councel, 33 they are in danger to be killed, through the advice of Gamaliel, a great counseller among the Jews, they be kept alive, 40 and are but beaten: for which they glorifie God, and cease no day from preaching.

BUt a certain man named Ananias with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles feet.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart || to lie to the holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

|| Or, to deceive.

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three houres after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband, are at the doore, and shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yeelded up the ghost: and the young men came in and found her dead, and carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the apostles were many signes and wonders wrought among the people; (and they were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man join him-

820

selfe to them: but the people magnified them.
14 And beleevers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women)
15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sick ‖ into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least, the shadow of Peter passing by, might overshadow some of them.
16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.
17 ¶ Then the high priest rose up, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees) and were filled with ‖ indignation,
18 And laid their hands on the apostles, and put them in the common prison.
19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, and said,
20 Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people, all the words of this life.
21 And when they heard that, they entred into the temple early in the morning, and taught: but the high priest came, and they that were with him, and called the councel together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.
22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,
23 Saying, The prison truely found we shut with all safetie, and the keepers standing without before the doores: but when we had opened, we found no man within.
24 Now when the high priest, and the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.
25 Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison, are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.
26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence: (for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned)
27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the councel: and the high priest asked them,
28 Saying, * Did not we straitly command you, that you should not teach in this name? and behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans bloud upon us.
29 ¶ Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather then men.
30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.
31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgivenesse of sinnes.
32 And we are his witnesses of these things, and so is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.
33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel to slay them.
34 Then stood there up one in the councel, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctour of law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little space,
35 And said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to your selves, what ye intend to do as touching these men.
36 For before these dayes rose up Theudas, boasting himself to be some body, to whom a number of men, about foure hundred, joyned themselves: who was slain, and all, as many as ‖ obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.
37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the dayes of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.
38 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsel, or this work be of men, it will come to nought.
39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it, lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.
40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.
41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the councel, rejoycing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his name.
42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

‖ Or, in every street.

‖ Or, envy.

*Chap. 4. 18.

CHAP. VI.

1 The apostles desirous to have the poore regarded for their bodily sustenance, as also carefull themselves to dispense the word of God the food of the soul, 3 appoint the office of deaconship to seven chosen men: 5 of whom, Stephen, a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, is one: 12 who is taken of those whom he confounded in disputing, 13 and after falsly accused of blasphemy against the law and the temple.

AND in those dayes, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration.
2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples unto them, and said, It is not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.
3 Wherefore brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost, and wisdome, whom we may appoint over this businesse.
4 But we will give our selves continually to prayer, and to the ministery of the word.
5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch.
6 Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.
7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly, and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.
8 And Stephen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.
9 ¶ Then there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called the synagogue of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Stephen.
10 And they were not able to resist the wisdome and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then

11 Then they subomed men which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses and against God.
12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the Scribes, and came upon him, and caught him, and brought him to the councel,
13 And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law.
14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the ‖ customes which Moses delivered us.
15 And all that sat in the councel, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

‖ Or, rites.

CHAP. VII.

1 Stephen permitted to answer to the accusation of blasphemy, 2 sheweth that Abraham worshipped God rightly, and how God chose the fathers, 20 before Moses was born, and before the tabernacle and temple were built: 37 that Moses himself witnessed of Christ: 44 and that all outward ceremonies were ordained according to the heavenly pattern to last but for a time: 51 reprehending their rebellion, and murdering of Christ, the just one, whom the prophets foretold should come into the world: 54 whereupon they stone him to death; who commendeth his soul to Jesus, and humbly prayeth for them.

THen said the high priest, Are these things so?
2 And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers hearken, The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,
*Gen. 12.1. 3 And said unto him, * Get thee out of thy countrey, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.
4 Then came he out of the land of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this land wherein ye now dwell.
5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no not so much as to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no childe.
6 And God spake on this wise, that his seed should sojourn in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and entreat them evil foure hundred yeares.
7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge, said God: and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this place.
*Gen. 17.9. 8 * And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: * and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day: * and Isaac begat Jacob, and * Jacob begat the twelve patriarchs.
*Gen. 21.3. *Gen. 25.26. *Gen. 29.31, &c.
*Gen. 37.28. 9 * And the patriarchs moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him,
10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, *Gen. 41.37. * and gave him favour and wisdome in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and he made him governour over Egypt, and all his house.
11 Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no sustenance.
*Gen. 42.1. 12 * But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first.
13 * And at the second time Joseph was made known to his brethren, and Josephs kindred was made known unto Pharaoh. *Gen. 45.4. 821
14 Then sent Joseph, and called his father Jacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen souls.
15 * So Jacob went down into Egypt, * and died, he and our fathers, *Gen. 46.5. *Gen. 49.33.
16 And were carried over into Sichem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a summe of money of the sonnes of Emmor the father of Sichem.
17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt,
18 Till another king arose, which knew not Joseph.
19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and evil entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live.
20 * In which time Moses was born, and * was ‖ exceeding fair, and nourished up in his fathers house three moneths: *Exod. 2.2. *Heb. 11.23. ‖ Or, fair to God.
21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own sonne.
22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdome of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words, and in deeds.
23 And when he was full fourty yeares old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren the children of Israel.
24 * And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he defended him, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian: *Exod. 2.11.
25 For he supposed his brethren would have understood, how that God by his hand would deliver them; but they understood not.
26 * And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren, why do ye wrong one to another? *Exod. 1.13.
27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us?
28 Wilt thou kill me as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday?
29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sonnes.
30 * And when fourty yeares were expired, there appeared to him in the wildernesse of mount Sina, an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush. *Exod. 3.2.
31 When Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight: and as he drew neare to behold it, the voice of the Lord came unto him,
32 Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not behold.
33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.
34 I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.
35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send to be a ruler and a [illegible] by the hands of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.

822

*Exod.7.9. *Exod.16.1.

36 He brought them out, after that he had * shewed wonders and signes in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, * and in the wildernesse fourty yeares.

*Deut.18.15.

37 ¶ This is that Moses which said unto the children of Israel, * A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, ‖ like unto me: him shall ye heare.

‖ Or, as my self.

38 * This is he that was in the church in the wildernesse, with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us.

*Exod.19.3.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt,

*Exod.32.1.

40 * Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us: for as for this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calf in those dayes, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoyced in the works of their own hands.

42 Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven, * as it is written in the book of the prophets, O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts, and sacrifices, by the space of fourty yeares in the wildernesse?

*Amos 5.25.

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the starre of your god Remphan, figures which ye made, to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witnesse in the wildernesse, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, * that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen.

*Exod.25.40

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the dayes of David.

46 Who found favour before God, and desired to finde a tabernacle for the God of Jacob.

*1.Chro.17.12.

47 * But Solomon built him an house.

* Chap.17.24.

48 * Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet,

49 Heaven is my throne, and earth is my foot-stool: what house will ye build me, saith the Lord? or what is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Ye stiff-necked and uncircumcised in heart and eares, ye do alwayes resist the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so do ye.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the just one, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:

53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked up stedfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Sonne of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their eares, and ran upon him with one accord,

58 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young mans feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus receive my spirit.

60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

CHAP. VIII.

By occasion of the persecution in Jerusalem, the church being planted in Samaria 5 by Philip the deacon, who preached, did miracles, and baptized many, among the rest Simon the sorcerer, a great seducer of the people; 14 Peter and John come to confirm, and enlarge the church: where by prayer, and imposition of hands, giving the holy Ghost, 18 when Simon would have bought the like power of them, 20 Peter sharply reproving his hypocrisie, and covetousnesse, and exhorting him to repentance, together with John preaching the word of the Lord, return to Jerusalem. 26 But the angel sendeth Philip to teach, and baptize the Ethiopian eunuch.

AND Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church which was at Jerusalem, and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apostles.

2 And devout men carried Stephen to his buriall, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havock of the church, entring into every house, and haling men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that city.

9 But there was a certain man called Simon, which before-time in the same citie used sorcerie, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one.

10 To whom they all gave heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleeved Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdome of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon himself beleeved also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signes which were done.

14 Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John.

15 Who when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: onely they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus).

17 Then

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the holy Ghost.
18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles hands, the holy Ghost was given, he offered them money,
19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghost.
20 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.
21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter, for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.
22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.
23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitternesse, and in the bond of iniquity.
24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me.
25 And they when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritanes.
26 And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south, unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.
27 And he arose and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem for to worship,
28 Was returning, and sitting in his chariot read Esaias the prophet.
29 Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go neare, and joyn thy self to this chariot.
30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him reade the prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest?
31 And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? and he desired Philip that he would come up, and sit with him.
32 The place of the scripture which he read, was this, * He was led as a sheep to the slaughter, and like a lambe dumbe before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth:
33 In his humiliation, his judgement was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.
34 And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?
35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.
36 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said, See here is water, what doth hinder me to be baptized?
37 And Philip said, If thou beleevest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I beleeve that Jesus Christ is the Sonne of God.
38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still, and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch, and he baptized him.
39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoycing.
40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through, he preached in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

*Isa. 53. 7.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Saul going towards Damascus, 4 is stricken down to the earth, 10 is called to the apostleship, 18 and is baptized by Ananias. 20 He preacheth Christ boldly. 23 The Jews lay wait to kill him; 29 so do the Grecians: but he escapeth both. 31 The church having rest, Peter healeth Æneas of the palsie, 36 and restoreth Tabitha to life.*

AND Saul yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest,
2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.
3 And as he journeyed he came neare Damascus, and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven.
4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?
5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? and the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.
6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.
7 And the men which journeyed with him stood speechlesse, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.
8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.
9 And he was three dayes without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.
10 ¶ And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord.
11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street, which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas, for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth,
12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias, coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.
13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem:
14 And here he hath authority from the chief priests, to binde all that call on thy name.
15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.
16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my names sake.
17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house, and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord (even Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.
18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales, and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.
19 And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus.
20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Sonne of God.

824

21 But all that heard him were amazed, and said, Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him:

24 * But their laying await was known of Saul: and they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let him down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to joyn himself to the disciples, but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them coming in, and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to passe, as Peter passed throughout all quarters, he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certain man named Aeneas, which had kept his bed eight yeares, and was sick of the palsie.

34 And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda, and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works, and almes-deeds which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not ‖ delay to come to them.

39 Then Peter arose, and went with them: when he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down and prayed, and turning him to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lift her up: and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive.

42 And it was known throughout all Joppa, and many believed in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that he tarried many dayes in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

* 2. Cor. 11. 32.

‖ Or, be grieved.

CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius a devout man, 5 being commanded by an angel, sendeth for Peter: 11 who by a vision, 15, 20 is taught not to despise the Gentiles. 34 As he preacheth Christ to Cornelius and his companie, 44 the holy Ghost falleth on them, 48 and they are baptized.

THere was a certain man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band,

2 A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much almes to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 He saw in a vision evidently, about the ninth houre of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come up for a memoriall before God.

5 And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter:

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea side: he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do.

7 And when the angel which spake unto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout souldier of them that waited on him continually.

8 And when he had declared all these things unto them, he sent them to Joppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the house top to pray, about the sixth houre.

10 And he became very hungry, and would have eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a trance,

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet, knit at the foure corners, and let down to the earth:

12 Wherein were all manner of foure-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the aire.

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord; for I have never eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

15 And the voice spake unto him again the second time, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

16 This was done thrice: and the vessel was received up again into heaven.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had seen, should mean: behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had made enquiry for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision, the spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down to the men which were sent unto him from Cornelius; and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report

report among all the nation of the Iews, was warned from God by an holy angel, to send for thee into his house, and to heare words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them: and on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entred into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and neare friends.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up, I my self also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawfull thing for a man that is a Iew, to keep company, or come unto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man common or unclean.

29 Therefore came I unto you without gainsaying, assoon as I was sent for: I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me.

30 And Cornelius said, Foure dayes ago I was fasting untill this houre, and at the ninth houre I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call hither Simon whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a tanner, by the sea side; who when he cometh, shall speak unto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee, and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, *Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons:

35 But in every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousnesse, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ (he is Lord of all)

37 That word (I say) you know, which was published throughout all Iudea, and began from Galilee, after the baptisme which Iohn preached:

38 How God anointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power, who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did both in the land of the Iews, and in Ierusalem, whom they slew and hanged on a tree:

40 Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly,

41 Not to all the people, but unto witnesses, chosen before of God, even to us who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testifie that it is he which was ordained of God to be the iudge of quick and dead.

43 *To him give all the prophets witnesse, that through his name whosoever beleeveth in him shall receive remission of sinnes.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which beleeved, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the holy Ghost, as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain dayes.

CHAP. XI.

1 Peter being accused for going in to the Gentiles, 5 maketh his defence, 18 which is accepted. 19 The gospel being spread into Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, Barnabas is sent to confirm them. 26 The disciples there are first called Christians. 27 They send relief to the brethren in Iudea in time of famine.

AND the apostles and brethren that were in Iudea, heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Ierusalem, they that were of the circumcision contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, and expounded it by order unto them, saying,

5 I was in the citie of Ioppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision, A certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by foure corners, and it came even to me.

6 Upon the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw foure-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the aire.

7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise Peter, slay, and eat.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me again from heaven, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the house where I was, sent from Cesarea unto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover, these six brethren accompanied me, and we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him, Send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter:

14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved.

15 And as I began to speak, the holy Ghost fell on them, * as on us at the beginning.

16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how that he said, * Iohn indeed baptized with water: but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as he did unto us, who beleeved on the Lord

825

*Deut. 10.17. Rom. 2.11. 1.Pet. 1.17.

*Jer. 31.34. Mic. 7.18.

*Chap. 2.4.

*John 1.26.

826

Lord Jesus Christ, what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

*Chap 8.1. 19 ¶ * Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen, travelled as farre as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none, but unto the Jews onely.

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and a great number beleeved, and turned unto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came unto the eares of the church which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as farre as Antioch.

23 Who when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole yeare they assembled themselves ‖ with the church, and taught much people, and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

‖ Or, in the church.

27 ¶ And in these dayes came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.

28 And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world, which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 King Herod persecuteth the Christians, killeth James, and imprisoneth Peter, whom an angel delivereth upon the prayers of the church. 20 In his pride, taking to himself the honour due to God, he is stricken by an angel, and dieth miserably. 24 After his death the word of God prospereth.

‖ Or, began.

NOw about that time, Herod the king ‖ stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church.

2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further, to take Peter also. (Then were the dayes of unleavened bread)

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to keep him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

‖ Or, instant and earnest prayer was made.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison, but ‖ prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two souldiers, bound with two chains, and the keepers before the doore kept the prison.

7 And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8 And the angel said unto him, Gird thy self, and binde on thy sandals: and so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel: but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city, which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street, and forthwith the angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark, where many were gathered together, praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the doore of the gate, a damsel came ‖ to hearken, named Rhoda.

‖ Or, to see who was there.

14 And when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the gate for gladnesse, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened the doore, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he beckening unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now assoon as it was day, there was no small stirre among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and there abode.

20 ¶ And Herod ‖ was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and having made Blastus † the kings chamberlain their friend, desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the kings countrey.

‖ Or, bare a hostile minde, intending warre.

† Gr. that was over the kings bed chamber.

21 And upon a set day, Herod arayed in royall apparell, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a god, and not of a man.

23 And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of wormes, and gave up the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their ‖ ministery, and took with them John whose surname was Mark.

‖ Or, charge. Chap. 13. 5.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are chosen to go to the Gentiles. 7 Of Sergius Paulus, and Elymas the sorcerer. 14 Paul preacheth at Antioch, that Jesus is Christ. 42 The Gentiles beleeve: 45 but the Jews gainsay, and blaspheme: 46 whereupon they turn to the Gentiles. 48 As many as were ordained to life, beleeved.

NOw there were in the church that was at Antioch, certain prophets, and teachers: as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, ‖ which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

‖ *Or,* Herods foster-brother.

2 As they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work whereunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.

4 ¶ So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had also John to their minister.

6 And when they had gone through the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Barjesus:

7 Which was with the deputy of the country, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man: who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul (who also is called Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtilty and all mischief, thou childe of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousnesse, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right wayes of the Lord?

11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, not seeing the sunne for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darknesse, and he went about seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the deputy when he saw what was done, beleeved, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and John departing from them, returned to Jerusalem.

14 ¶ But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and sat down.

15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood up, and beckening with his hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people * when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought he them out of it.

18 And about the time of fourty yeares † suffered he their manners in the wildernesse.

19 And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Chanaan, * he divided their land to them by lot.

20 And after that * he gave unto them judges, about the space of foure hundred and fifty yeares, untill Samuel the prophet.

21 * And afterward they desired a king, and God gave unto them Saul the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of fourty yeares.

22 And when he had removed him, * he raised up unto them David to be their king, to whom also he gave testimonie, and said, * I have found David the sonne of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

23 * Of this mans seed hath God according to his promise, raised unto Israel a Saviour Jesus:

24 * When John had first preached before his coming, the baptisme of repentance to all the people of Israel.

25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said, * Whom think ye that I am? I am not he. But behold, there cometh one after me, whose shoes of his feet I am not worthy to loose.

26 Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent.

27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath-day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him,

28 * And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre.

30 * But God raised him from the dead:

31 And he was seen many dayes of them which came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses unto the people.

32 And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again, as it is also written in the second psalme, * Thou art my sonne, this day have I begotten thee.

34 And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, * I will give you the sure † mercies of David.

35 Wherefore he saith also in another psalme, * Thou shalt not suffer thine holy one to see corruption.

36 For David ‖ after he had served his own generation by the will of God, * fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption:

37 But he whom God raised again, saw no corruption.

38 ¶ Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgivenesse of sinnes.

39 And by him all that beleeve are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.

40 Beware therefore, lest that come upon you which is spoken of in * the prophets,

41 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your dayes, a work which you shall in no wise beleeve, though a man declare it unto you.

42 And when the Jews were gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them † the next sabbath.

43 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews, & religious proselytes followed Paul & Barnabas, who speaking to them,

* 1. Sam. 8. 5.

* 1. Sam. 16. 13.
* Psal. 89. 20.

* Isa. 11. 1.

* Matt. 3. 1.

* John 1. 20.

* Matt. 27. 22.

* Matt. 28. 6.

* Psal. 2. 7. Hebr. 1. 5.

* Isa. 55. 3.
† Gr. *holy, or just things: which word the Sept. both in the place of* Isa. 55. 3. *and in many others, use for that which is in the Hebrew,* mercies.

* Psal. 16. 10.
‖ *Or,* after he had in his own age served the will of God.
* 1. Kin. 2. 10
* Hab. 1. 5.

* Exod. 1. 1.
* Exod. 13. 14, 16.
† Gr. ἐτροποφόρησεν, *perhaps for* ἐτραποφόρησεν, as a nurse beareth, *or* feedeth her childe, Deut. 1. 31. 2. Mac. 7. 27. *according to the Sept. and so Chrysost.*
* Josh. 14. 2.
* Judg. 3. 9.

* Or, in the week next [illegible] between.

828

perswaded them to continue in the grace of God.
44 ¶ And the next sabbath-day came almost the whole city together to heare the word of God.
45 But when the Iews saw the multitudes, they were filled with envie, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.
46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge your selves unworthy of everlasting life; lo, we turn to the Gentiles.
47 For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, * I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.
48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternall life, beleeved.
49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.
50 But the Iews stirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chiefe men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.
51 * But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium.
52 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the holy Ghost.

* Isa. 49.6.
* Matt. 10.14

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted from Iconium. 8 At Lystra Paul healeth a creeple, whereupon they are reputed as gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They passe through divers churches, confirming the disciples in faith and patience. 26 Returning to Antioch, they report what God had done with them.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Iews, and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iews, and also of the Greeks, beleeved.
2 But the unbeleeving Iews stirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil affected against the brethren.
3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimonie unto the word of his grace, and granted signes and wonders to be done by their hands.
4 But the multitude of the city was divided: and part held with the Iews, and part with the apostles.
5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Iews, with their rulers, to use them despitefully, and to stone them,
6 They were ware of it, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region that lieth round about.
7 And there they preached the gospel.
8 ¶ And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet, being a creeple from his mothers wombe, who never had walked.
9 The same heard Paul speak, who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed,
10 Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet; and he leaped and walked.
11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voices, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likenesse of men.
12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter; & Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.
13 Then the priest of Iupiter which was before their city, brought oxen and garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.
14 Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out,
15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you, that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, * which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.
16 * Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own wayes.
17 Nevertheless he left not himself without witnesse, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladnesse.
18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.
19 ¶ And there came thither certain Iews from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, * and having stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing he had been dead.
20 Howbeit, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.
21 And when they had preached the gospel to that city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch,
22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdome of God.
23 And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they beleeved.
24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.
25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia,
26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, for the work which they fulfilled.
27 And when they were come and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the doore of faith unto the Gentiles.
28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

* Gen. 1.1. Psal. 146.6. Revel. 14.7.
* Psal. 81.12.
* 2 Cor. 11.25.

CHAP. XV.

Great dissension ariseth touching circumcision. 6 The apostles consult about it, 22 and send their determination by letters to the churches. 36 Paul and Barnabas, thinking to visit the brethren together, fall at strife, and depart asunder.

AND certain men which came down from Iudea, taught the brethren, and said, * Except ye be circumcised after the manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.
2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them should go up to Ierusalem unto the apostles and elders about this question.
3 And being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice, and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.
4 And when they were come to Ierusalem, they

* Gal. 5.2.

they were received of the church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, that it was needfull to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the apostles and elders came together for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up and said unto them, * Men and brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word of the gospel, and believe.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witnesse, giving them the holy Ghost, even as he did unto us:

9 And put no difference between us and them, * purifying their hearts by faith.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, * to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?

11 But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved even as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, Men and brethren, hearken unto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets, as it is written,

16 * After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down: and I will build again the ruines thereof, and I will set it up:

17 That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from bloud.

21 For Moses of old time hath in every citie them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath-day.

22 Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas: namely, Judas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren.

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner, The apostles, and elders, and brethren send greeting unto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keep the law, to whom we gave no such commandment:

25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul;

26 Men that have hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things;

29 That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from bloud, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep your selves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they rejoyced for the ‖ consolation.

‖ Or, exhortation.

32 And Judas and Silas, being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them.

33 And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 ¶ And some dayes after, Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again, and visit our brethren, in every city where we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them John, whose surname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

39 And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other: and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus;

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Paul having circumcised Timothy, 7 and being called by the Spirit from one country to another, 14 converteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of divination. 19 For which cause he and Silas are whipped and imprisoned. 26 The prison doores are opened. 31 The jaylour is converted, 37 and they are delivered.

THen came he to Derbe and Lystra: and behold, a certain disciple was there, * named Timotheus, the sonne of a certain woman which was a Jewesse, and believed: but his father was a Greek:

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him, and took and circumcised him, because of the Jews which were in those quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greek.

4 And as they went through the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep, * that were ordained of the apostles and elders which were at Jerusalem.

5 And so were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia,

7 After

'Chap. 10 20 and 11. 13.

'Chap. 10. 43
1. Cor. 1. 2.
'Matt. 23. 4.

*Amos 9. 11.

*Rom. 16. 21.

*Chap. 15. 28

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis;

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is ‖ the chief city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony: and we were in that citie abiding certain dayes.

‖ Or, the first

13 And on the sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made, and we sat down, and spake unto the women which resorted thither.

14 ¶ And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized, and her houshold, she besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithfull to the Lord, come into my house and abide there. And she constrained us.

16 ¶ And it came to passe, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel, possessed with a spirit ‖ of divination, met us, which brought her masters much gain by soothsaying:

‖ Or, of Python.

17 The same followed Paul, and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the ‖ market-place, unto the rulers,

‖ Or, court.

20 And brought them to the magistrates, saying, These men being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our city,

21 And teach customes which are not lawfull for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them, and the magistrates rent off their clothes, * and commanded to beat them.

* 2. Cor. 11. 25. 1. Thes. 2. 2.

23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast them into prison, charging the jaylour to keep them safely.

24 Who having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken: and immediately all the doores were opened, and every ones bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doores open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, Do thy self no harm, for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and fell down before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what must I do to be saved?

31 And they said, Beleeve on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And he took them the same houre of the night, and washed their stripes, and was baptized, he and all his, straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and rejoyced, beleeving in God with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the magistrates sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men go.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go: now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul said unto them, They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romanes, and have cast us into prison, and now do they thrust us out privily? nay verily, but let them come themselves and fetch us out.

38 And the sergeants told these words unto the magistrates: and they feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the city.

40 And they went out of the prison, * and entred into the house of Lydia, and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

* Vers.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Thessalonica: 4 where some beleeve, and others persecute him. 10 He is sent to Berea, and preacheth there. 13 Being persecuted at Thessalonica, 15 he cometh to Athens, and disputeth and preacheth the living God to them unknown, 34 whereby many are converted unto Christ.

NOw when they had passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.

2 And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath-dayes reasoned with them out of the scriptures,

3 Opening and alledging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead: and that this Jesus whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleeved, and consorted with Paul and Silas: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Jews which beleeved not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uprore, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certain brethren, unto the rulers of the city, crying, These that have turned the world upside down, are come hither also,

7 Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, that there is another king, one Jesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of

of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither, went into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readinesse of minde, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them believed: also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people.

14 And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens, and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all speed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city ‖ wholly given to idolatry.

17 Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountred him: and some said, What will this ‖ babler say? other some, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods: because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

19 And they took him, and brought him unto ‖ Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our eares: we would know therefore what these things mean.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell or to heare some new thing)

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the mids of ‖ Marshill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by and beheld your ‖ devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

24 * God that made the world and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands:

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, * as though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things:

26 And hath made of one blood, all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

27 That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and finde him, though he be not farre from every one of us.

28 For in him we live, and move, and have our being, as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his offspring.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, * we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone graven by art and mans device.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at, but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

31 Because he hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousnesse, by that man whom he hath ordained, whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.

32 ¶ And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked: and others said, We will heare thee again of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Howbeit, certain men clave unto him, and believed: among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

3 Paul laboureth with his hands, and preacheth at Corinth to the Gentiles. 9 The Lord encourageth him in a vision. 12 He is accused before Gallio the deputie, but is dismissed. 18 Afterwards passing from city to city, he strengtheneth the disciples. 24 Apollos being more perfectly instructed by Aquila and Priscilla, 28 preacheth Christ with great efficacy.

AFter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth,

2 And found a certain Jew named * Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome) and came unto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tent-makers.)

4 And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and perswaded the Jews, and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, * he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads, I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

7 ¶ And he departed thence, and entred into a certain mans house, named Justus, one that worshipped God, whose house joyned hard to the synagogue.

8 * And Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue believed on the Lord, with all his house: and many of the Corinthians hearing, believed, and were baptized.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

11 And he † continued there a yeare and six moneths, teaching the word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the judgement-seat,

13 Saying, This fellow perswadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdnesse, O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear with you.

15 But if it be a question of words and names,

and

831

‖ Or, offered faith.

‖ Or, full of idols.

‖ Or, base fellow.

‖ Or, Marshill. *It was the highest court in Athens.*

‖ Or, court of the Areopagites.

‖ Or, gods that you worship, 2. Thess. 2. 4.

*Rom. 16. 3.

*Mat. 10. 14.

* 1. Cor. 1. 14

† Gr. sat there.

*Chap. 7. 48

*Psal. 50. 8.

*Isa. 40. 18.

and of your law, look ye to it; for I will be no judge of such matters.

16 And he drave them from the judgement-seat.

17 Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgement-seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence unto Syria, and with him Priscilla and Aquila: having shorn his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entred into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh in Jerusalem; but I will return again unto you, * if God will: and he sailed from Ephesus.

*1. Cor. 4. 19 James 4. 15.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone up and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, he departed, and went over all the country of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ * And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus.

*1. Cor. 1. 12

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptisme of John.

26 And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to passe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had beleeved through grace.

28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publickly, shewing by the scriptures, that Jesus was Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

6 The holy Ghost is given by Pauls hands. 9 The Jews blaspheme his doctrine, which is confirmed by miracles. 13 The Jewish exorcists 16 are beaten by the devil. 19 Conjuring books are burnt. 24 Demetrius, for love of gain, raiseth an uproar against Paul, 35 which is appeased by the town-clerk.

AND it came to passe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus; and finding certain disciples,

2 He said unto them, Have ye received the holy Ghost since ye beleeved? and they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto Johns baptisme.

* Matt. 3. 11.

4 Then said Paul, * John verily baptized with the baptisme of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should beleeve on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the synagogue, and spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing and perswading the things concerning the kingdome of God.

9 But when divers were hardened, and beleeved not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the schoole of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeares, so that all they which dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought speciall miracles by the hands of Paul.

12 So that from his body were brought unto the sick, handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits, the name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seven sonnes of one Sceva a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so.

15 And the evil spirit answered and said, Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leapt on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus, and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeved came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

19 Many also of them which used curious arts, brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and prevailed.

21 ¶ After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia & Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred unto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stirre about that way.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silver-smith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the craftsmen.

25 Whom he called together with the workmen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth.

26 Moreover, ye see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not only this our craft is in danger to be set at nought: but also that the temple of the great goddesse Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And

29 And the whole city was filled with confusion, and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in travel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entred in unto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring him that he would not adventure himself into the theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckened with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two houres cried out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the town-clerk had appeased the people, he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is † a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the image which fell down from Jupiter?

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddesse.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man, ‖ the law is open, and there are deputies, let them implead one another.

39 But if ye enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a ‖ lawfull assembly.

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this dayes uproar, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

† Or, the temple-keeper.

‖ Or, the court-dayes are kept.

‖ Or, ordinary.

CHAP. XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 He celebrateth the Lords supper, and preacheth. 9 Eutychus having fallen down dead, 10 is raised to life. 17 At Miletus he calleth the elders together, telleth them what shall befall to himself, 28 committeth Gods flock to them, 29 warneth them of false teachers, 32 commendeth them to God, 36 prayeth with them, and goeth his way.

AND after the uproar was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece,

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Jews laid wait for him, as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea: and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus and Secundus: and Gaius of Derbe and Timotheus: and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, tarried for us at Troas.

6 And we sailed away from Philippi, after the dayes of unleavened bread, and came unto them to Troas in five dayes, where we abode seven dayes.

7 And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together * to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech until midnight.

8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sat in a window a certain young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep, and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.

10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him, said, Trouble not your selves, for his life is in him.

11 When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And we went before to ship, and sailed unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul: for so had he appointed, minding himself to go afoot.

14 And when he met with us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day over against Chios, and the next day we arrived at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllium: and the next day we came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the elders of the church.

18 And when they were come to him, he said unto them, Ye know from the first day that I came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you at all seasons,

19 Serving the Lord with all humility of minde, and with many tears, and temptations which befell me by the lying in wait of the Jews:

20 And how I kept back nothing that was profitable unto you, but have shewed you, & have taught you publickly, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Jews and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I go bound in the spirit unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Save that the holy Ghost witnesseth in every city, saying, that bonds and afflictions ‖ abide me.

24 But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto my self; so that I might finish my course with joy, and the ministery which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testifie the gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore unto your selves, and to all the flock, over the which the holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

30 Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

* Chap. 2. 46.

‖ Or, wait for me.

834

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the ſpace of three yeares, I ceaſed not to warn every one night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are ſanctified.

33 I have coveted no mans ſilver, or gold, or apparell.

34 Yea, you your ſelves know, * that theſe hands have miniſtred unto my neceſſities, and to them that were with me.

35 I have ſhewed you all things, how that ſo labouring, ye ought to ſupport the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jeſus, how he ſaid, It is more bleſſed to give then to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus ſpoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept ſore, and fell on Pauls neck, and kiſſed him,

38 Sorrowing moſt of all for the words which he ſpake, that they ſhould ſee his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ſhip.

* 1. Cor. 4. 12. 1. Theſſ. 2. 9. 2. Theſſ. 3. 8.

CHAP. XXI.

Paul will not by any means be diſſwaded from going to Jeruſalem. 9 Philips daughters propheteſſes. 17 Paul cometh to Jeruſalem: 27 where he is apprehended, and in great danger, 31 but by the chief captain is reſcued, and permitted to ſpeak to the people.

AND it came to paſſe, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a ſtraight courſe unto Choos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara.

2 And finding a ſhip ſailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and ſet forth.

3 Now when we had diſcovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and ſailed into Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ſhip was to unlade her burden.

4 And finding diſciples, we tarried there ſeven dayes: who ſaid to Paul through the Spirit, that he ſhould not go up to Jeruſalem.

5 And when we had accompliſhed thoſe dayes, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of the city: and we kneeled down on the ſhore, and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ſhip, and they returned home again.

7 And when we had finiſhed our courſe from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, and ſaluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls company departed, and came unto Ceſarea, and we entred into the houſe of Philip the evangeliſt, (* which was one of the ſeven) and abode with him.

* Chap. 6. 5.

9 And the ſame man had foure daughters, virgins, which did propheſie.

10 And as we tarried there many dayes, there came down from Judea a certain prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Pauls girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and ſaid, Thus ſaith the holy Ghoſt, So ſhall the Jews at Jeruſalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and ſhall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard theſe things, both we and they of that place, beſought him not to go up to Jeruſalem.

13 Then Paul anſwered, What mean ye to weep, and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound onely, but alſo to die at Jeruſalem for the name of the Lord Jeſus.

14 And when he would not be perſwaded, we ceaſed, ſaying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after thoſe dayes we took up our carriages, and went up to Jeruſalem.

16 There went with us alſo certain of the diſciples of Ceſarea, and brought with them one Mnaſon of Cyprus, an old diſciple, with whom we ſhould lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jeruſalem, the brethren received us gladly.

18 And the day following Paul went in with us unto James, and all the elders were preſent.

19 And when he had ſaluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his miniſtery.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and ſaid unto him, Thou ſeeſt, brother, how many thouſands of Jews there are which beleeve, and they are all zealous of the law.

21 And they are informed of thee that thou teacheſt all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forſake Moſes, ſaying, that they ought not to circumciſe their children, neither to walk after the cuſtomes.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude muſt needs come together: for they will heare that thou art come.

23 Do therefore this that we ſay to thee: we have foure men which have a vow on them;

24 Them take, and purifie thy ſelf with them, and be at charges with them, that they may * ſhave their heads: and all may know that thoſe things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy ſelf alſo walkeſt orderly, and keepeſt the law.

* Num. 6. 18. Chap. 18. 18.

25 As touching the Gentiles which beleeve, * we have written and concluded, that they obſerve no ſuch thing, ſave onely that they keep themſelves from things offered to idols, and from blood, and from ſtrangled, and from fornication.

* Chap. 15. 20.

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himſelf with them, entred into the temple, * to ſignifie the accompliſhment of the dayes of purification, until that an offering ſhould be offered for every one of them.

* Num. 6. 13.

27 And when the ſeven dayes were almoſt ended, the Jews which were of Aſia, when they ſaw him in the temple, ſtirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Iſrael, help: this is the man that teacheth all men every where againſt the people, and the law, and this place: and farther, brought Greeks alſo into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had ſeen before with him in the citie, Trophimus an Epheſian, whom they ſuppoſed that Paul had brought into the temple)

30 And all the city was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: & forthwith the doores were ſhut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jeruſalem was in an uproar.

32 Who immediately took ſouldiers, and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they ſaw the chief captain and the ſouldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came neare and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains, and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And

34 And some cried one thing, some another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle.

35 And when he came upon the stairs, so it was that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain, May I speak unto thee? Who said, Canst thou speak Greek?

* Chap. 5. 36 38 * Art not thou that Egyptian which before these dayes madest an uproar, and leddest out into the wildernesse foure thousand men that were murderers?

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Jew of Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean citie: and I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the people.

40 And when he had given him license, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckened with the hand unto the people: and when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul declareth at large, how he was converted to the faith, 17 and called to his apostleship. 22 At the very mentioning of the Gentiles, the people exclaim on him. 24 He should have been scourged; 25 but claiming the priviledge of a Romane, he escapeth.

MEn, brethren, and fathers, heare ye my defence, which I make now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith)

* Chap. 21. 39. 3 * I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus a citie in Cilicia, yet brought up in this citie, at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day.

* Chap. 8. 3. 4 * And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.

5 As also the high priest doth beare me witnesse, and all the estate of the elders: from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there, bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice saying unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with me, saw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me.

10 And I said, What shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt there,

835

13 Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same houre I looked up upon him.

14 And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that just one, and shouldest heare the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witnesse unto all men, of what thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sinnes, calling on the name of the Lord.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance;

18 And saw him saying unto me, Make haste, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I imprisoned, and beat in every synagogue them that believed on thee.

* Chap. 7. 58. 20 * And when the bloud of thy martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.

21 And he said unto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and then lift up their voices, and said, Away with such a fellow from the earth: for it is not fit that he should live.

23 And as they cried out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the aire,

24 The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the castle, and bad that he should be examined by scourging: that he might know wherefore they cried so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the centurion that stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man that is a Romane, and uncondemned?

26 When the centurion heard that, he went and told the chief captain, saying, Take heed what thou dost, for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chief captain came, and said unto him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? He said, Yea.

28 And the chief captain answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedome. And Paul said, But I was free born.

29 Then straightway they departed from him which should have ‖ examined him: and the chief captain also was afraid after he knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bound him.

‖ Or, tortured him.

30 On the morrow, because he would have known the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Jews, he loosed him from his bands, and commanded the chief priests and all their councel to appeare, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 As Paul pleadeth his cause, 2 Ananias commandeth them to smite him. 7 Dissension among his accusers. 11 God encourageth him. 14 The Jews laying wait for Paul 20 is declared unto the chief captain. 27 He sendeth him to Felix the governour.

AND Paul earnestly beholding the councel, said, Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God, untill this day.

836

2 And the high prieſt Ananias commanded them that ſtood by him, to ſmite him on the mouth.

3 Then ſaid Paul unto him, God ſhall ſmite thee, thou whited wall: for ſitteſt thou to judge me after the law, and commandeſt me to be ſmitten contrary to the law?

4 And they that ſtood by, ſaid, Revileſt thou Gods high prieſt?

5 Then ſaid Paul, I wiſt not brethren, that he was the high prieſt: For it is written, *Thou ſhalt not ſpeak evil of the ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Phariſees, he cried out in the councel, Men and brethren, *I am a Phariſee, the ſonne of a Phariſee: *of the hope and reſurrection of the dead, I am called in queſtion.

7 And when he had ſo ſaid, there aroſe a diſſenſion between the Phariſees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided.

8 *For the Sadducees ſay that there is no reſurrection, neither angel nor ſpirit; but the Phariſees confeſſe both.

9 And there aroſe a great crie: and the Scribes that were of the Phariſees part aroſe, and ſtrove, ſaying, We finde no evil in this man: but if a ſpirit or an angel hath ſpoken to him, let us not fight againſt God.

10 And when there aroſe a great diſſenſion, the chief captain fearing leſt Paul ſhould have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the ſouldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the caſtle.

11 And the night following, the Lord ſtood by him, and ſaid, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou haſt teſtified of me in Jeruſalem, ſo muſt thou bear witneſſe alſo at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themſelves ‖ under a curſe, ſaying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then fourty which had made this conſpiracy.

14 And they came to the chief prieſts and elders, and ſaid, We have bound our ſelves under a great curſe, that we will eat nothing untill we have ſlain Paul.

15 Now therefore ye with the councel, ſignifie to the chief captain, that he bring him down unto you to morrow, as though ye would enquire ſomething more perfectly concerning him: and we, or ever he come neare, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls ſiſters ſonne heard of their lying in wait, he went and entred into the caſtle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and ſaid, Bring this young man unto the chief captain: for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and ſaid, Paul the priſoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath ſomething to ſay unto thee.

19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went with him aſide privately, and asked him, What is that thou haſt to tell me?

20 And he ſaid, The Jews have agreed to deſire thee, that thou wouldeſt bring down Paul to morrow into the councel, as though they would enquire ſomewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yeeld unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them moe then fourty men, which have bound themſelves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promiſe from thee.

22 So the chief captain then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou haſt ſhewed theſe things to me.

23 And he called unto him two centurions, ſaying, Make ready two hundred ſouldiers to go to Ceſarea, and horſemen threeſcore and ten, and ſpearmen two hundred, at the third houre of the night,

24 And provide them beaſts, that they may ſet Paul on, and bring him ſafe unto Felix the governour.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner.

26 Claudius Lyſias, unto the moſt excellent governour Felix, ſendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and ſhould have been killed of them: then came I with an army, and reſcued him, having underſtood that he was a Romane.

28 And when I would have known the cauſe wherefore they accuſed him, I brought him forth into their councel:

29 Whom I perceived to be accuſed of queſtions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I ſent ſtraightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accuſers alſo, to ſay before thee what they had againſt him. Farewell.

31 Then the ſouldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.

32 On the morrow they left the horſemen to go with him, and returned to the caſtle.

33 Who when they came to Ceſarea and delivered the epiſtle to the governour, preſented Paul alſo before him.

34 And when the governour had read the letter, he asked of what province he was. And when he underſtood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will heare thee, ſaid he, when thine accuſers are alſo come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herods judgement-hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Paul being accuſed by Tertullus the oratour, 10 anſwereth for his life and doctrine. 24 He preacheth Chriſt to the governour and his wife. 26 The governour hopeth for a bribe, but in vain. 27 At laſt, going out of his office, he leaveth Paul in priſon.

AND after five dayes, Ananias the high prieſt deſcended with the elders, and with a certain orator named Tertullus, who enformed the governour againſt Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuſe him, ſaying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietneſſe, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence,

3 We accept it alwayes, and in all places, moſt noble Felix, with all thankfulneſſe.

4 Notwithſtanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldeſt heare us of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we have found this man a peſtilent fellow, and a mover of ſedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the ſect of the Nazarenes.

6 Who alſo hath gone about to profane the temple:

* Exod. 22. 28.
* Phil. 3. 5.
* Chap. 24. 21.
* Matt. 22. 23.
‖ Or, with an oath of execration.

temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.

7 But the chief captain Lysias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands;

8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee: by examining of whom, thy self mayest take knowledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying, that these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the governour had beckened unto him to speak, answered, Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many yeares a judge unto this nation, I do the more cheerfully answer for my self:

11 Because that thou mayest understand, that there are yet but twelve dayes since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in the citie:

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse unto thee, that after the way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeving all things which are written in the law and the prophets.

15 And have hope towards God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

16 And herein do I exercise my self to have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeares, I came to bring almes to my nation, and offerings.

* Chap. 21. 27. 18 * Whereupon certain Jews from Asia found me purified in the temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult:

19 Who ought to have been here before thee, and object, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they have found any evil doing in me, while I stood before the councel,

* Chap. 23.6 21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cried standing among them, * Touching the resurrection of the dead, I am called in question by you this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, having more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and said, When Lysias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your matter.

23 And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul, and to let him have liberty, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister, or come unto him.

24 And after certain dayes, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewesse, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousnesse, temperance, and judgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time, when I have a convenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore he sent for him the oftner, and communed with him.

27 But after two yeares, Porcius Festus came into Felix room: and Felix willing to shew the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

8 37

2 The Jews accuse Paul before Festus. 8 He answereth for himself, 11 and appealeth unto Cesar. 14 Afterwards, Festus openeth his matter to king Agrippa: 23 and he is brought forth. 25 Festus cleareth him to have done nothing worthy of death.

NOw when Festus was come into the province, after three dayes he ascended from Cesarea to Jerusalem.

2 Then the high priest, and the chief of the Jews informed him against Paul, and besought him,

3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly thither.

5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you are able, go down with me, and accuse this man, if there be any wickednesse in him.

6 And when he had tarried among them ‖ more then ten dayes, he went down unto Cesarea, and the next day sitting in the judgement-seat, commanded Paul to be brought.

‖ *Or, as some copies reade,* no more then eight or ten dayes

7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem, stood round about, and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove.

8 While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all.

9 But Festus willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars judgement-seat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Cesar.

12 Then Festus when he had conferred with the councel, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou go.

13 And after certain dayes, king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had been there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have judgement against him.

16 To whom I answered; It is not the manner of the Romanes to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accused, have the accusers face to face, and have licence to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sat on the judgement-seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus, which

838

was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

20 And because ‖ I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked him whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be reserved unto the ‖ hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus, I would also heare the man my self. To morrow, said he, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entred into the place of hearing, with the chief captains, and principall men of the city, at Festus commandment Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with us, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and also here, crying that he ought not to live any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him.

26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord: wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might have somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withall to signifie the crimes laid against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

2 Paul in the presence of Agrippa, declareth his life from his childehood, 12 and how miraculously he was converted, and called to his apostleship. 24 Festus chargeth him to be mad, whereunto he answereth modestly. 28 Agrippa is almost perswaded to be a Christian. 31 The whole company pronounce him innocent.

THen Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thy self. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself,

2 I think my self happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for my self this day before thee, touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews:

3 Especially because I know thee to be expert in all customes and questions which are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech thee to heare me patiently.

4 My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews,

5 Which knew me from the beginning, (if they would testifie) that after the most straitest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand, and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers:

7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes instantly serving God day and night, hope to come: for which hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

9 I verily thought with my self that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

10 * Which thing I also did in Jerusalem, and many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests, and when they were put to death I gave my voice against them.

11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme: and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.

12 * Whereupon as I went to Damascus, with authority and commission from the chief priests:

13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightnesse of the sunne, shining round about me, and them which journeyed with me.

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet, for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and a witnesse both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appeare unto thee;

17 Delivering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darknesse to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveneſſe of sinnes, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient unto the heavenly vision:

20 But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things then those which the prophets and Moses did say should come:

23 That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus spake for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul thou art beside thy self, much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speak forth the words of truth and soberneſſe.

26 For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely: for I am perswaded that none of these things are hidden from him: for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleevest thou the prophets? I know that thou beleevest.

28 Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God, that not onely thou, but also all that heare me this day, were both almost, and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose up, and the governour, and Bernice, and they that sat with them.

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked between themselves, saying, This man doth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa unto Festus, This man

‖ *Or*, I was doubtfull how to enquire hereof. ‖ *Or*, judgement.

* Chap. 9. 3

* Chap. 9. 2.

man might have been set at libertie, if he had not appealed unto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul shipping toward Rome, 10 foretelleth of the danger of the voyage, 11 but is not beleeved. 14 They are tossed to and fro with tempest, 41 and suffer shipwrack, 22,34,44, yet all come safe to land.

AND when it was determined that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners, unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to sail by the coasts of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian, of Thessalonica, being with us.

3 And the next day we touched at Sidon. And Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave him libertie to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the windes were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra a city of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria sailing into Italy, and he put us therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many dayes, and scarce were come over against Gnidus, the winde not suffering us, we sailed under ‖ Creet, over against Salmone:

‖ *Or*, Candy.

8 And hardly passing it, came unto a place which is called, The fair havens, nigh whereunto was the city of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

10 And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with ‖ hurt and much damage, not onely of the lading and ship, but also of our lives.

‖ *Or*, injurie.

11 Nevertheless, the centurion beleeved the master and the owner of the ship, more then those things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, and there to winter; which is an haven of Creet, and lyeth toward the south-west, and north-west.

13 And when the south winde blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence they sailed close by Creet.

14 But not long after there ‖ arose against it a tempestuous winde, called Euroclydon.

‖ *Or*, beat.

15 And when the ship was caught, and could not bear up into the winde, we let her drive.

16 And running under a certain island which is called Clauda, we had much work to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken up, they used helps, undergirding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the quicksands, strake sail, and so were driven.

18 And being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day they lightened the ship,

19 And the third day we cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And when neither sunne nor starres in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay on us, all hope that we should be saved, was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from Creet, and to have gained this harm and losse:

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no losse of any mans life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 Saying, Fear not Paul, thou must be brought before Cesar; and lo, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee.

25 Wherefore sirs be of good cheer: for I beleeve God, that it shall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we must be cast upon a certain island.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria about midnight, the shipmen deemed that they drew neare to some country:

28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast foure ancres out of the stern, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boat into the sea, under colour as though they would have cast ancres out of the forepart,

31 Paul said to the centurion, and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried and continued fasting, having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take some meat, for this is for your health: for there shall not an haire fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all, and when he had broken it, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they also took some meat.

37 And we were in all in the ship, two hundred threescore and sixteen soules.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek, with a shore, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had ‖ taken up the ancres, they committed themselves unto the sea, and loosed the rudder bands, and hoised up the main sail to the winde, and made toward shore.

‖ *Or*, cut the ancres, they left them in the sea, &c.

41 And falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the ship aground, and the fore-part stuck fast, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder-part was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the souldiers counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out and escape.

43 But the centurion, willing to save Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded that they which could swim, should cast themselves first into the sea, and get to land:

44 And the rest, some on boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe that they escaped all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 Paul after his shipwrack is kindly entertained of the Barbarians. 5 The viper on his hand hurteth him not. 8 He healeth many diseases in the island. 11 They depart towards Rome. 17 He declareth to the Jews the cause of his coming. 24 After his preaching some were perswaded, and some beleeved not. 30 Yet he preacheth there two yeares.

AND when they were escaped, then they knew that the island was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people shewed us no little kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, and received us every one because of the present rain, and because of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians saw the venimous beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live.

5 And he shook off the beast into the fire, and felt no harm.

6 Howbeit they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their mindes, and said that he was a God.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius, who received us and lodged us three dayes courteously.

8 And it came to passe that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever, and of a bloudy flix, to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the island, came, and were healed:

10 Who also honoured us with many honours, and when we departed, they laded us with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there three dayes.

13 And from thence we fet a compasse, and came to Rhegium, and after one day the south winde blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:

14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven dayes: and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as farre as Appii forum, and the Three taverns: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard: but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes, Paul called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them, Men and brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people or customes of our fathers; yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would have let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Jews spake against it, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar, not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore have I called for you, to see you, and to speak with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

21 And they said unto him, We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewed or spake any harm of thee.

22 But we desire to heare of thee what thou thinkest: for as concerning this sect, we know that every where it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into his lodging, to whom he expounded and testified the kingdome of God, perswading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

24 And some beleeved the things which were spoken, and some beleeved not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word, Well spake the holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet, unto our fathers,

26 Saying, * Go unto this people, and say, Hearing ye shall heare, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and heare with their eares, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

28 Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will heare it.

29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

30 And Paul dwelt two whole yeares in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him,

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

* Isa. 6. 9. Matt. 13. 14. Mark 4. 12. Luke 8. 10. John 12. 40. Rom. 11. 8.

The Epistle of Paul the apostle, to the ROMANES.

CHAP. I.

1 Paul commendeth his calling, to the Romanes, 9 and his desire to come to them. 16 What his gospel is, and the righteousnesse which it sheweth. 18 God is angry with all manner of sinne. 21 What were the sinnes of the Gentiles.

PAUL a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, * separated unto the gospel of God,

2 (Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures)

3 Concerning his Sonne Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh,

4 And † declared to be the Sonne of God with power, according to the spirit of holinesse, by the resurrection from the dead.

5 By whom we have received grace and apostleship ‖ for obedience to the faith among all nations for his name.

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnesse, whom I serve ‖ with my spirit in the gospel of his Sonne, that without ceasing I make mention of you alwayes in my prayers,

10 Making request (if by any meanes now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God) to come unto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spirituall gift, to the end you may be established.

12 That is, that I may be comforted together ‖ with you, by the mutuall faith both of you & me.

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you (but was let hitherto) that I might have some fruit ‖ among you also, even as among other Gentiles.

14 I am debter both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise, and to the unwise.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that believeth, to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

17 For therein is the righteousnesse of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, * The just shall live by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodlinesse, and unrighteousnesse of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousnesse.

19 Because that which may be known of God, is manifest ‖ in them, for God hath shewed it unto them.

20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternall power and Godhead, ‖ so that they are without excuse.

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankfull, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened.

22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools:

23 And changed the glory of the uncorruptible * God, into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourefooted beasts, and creeping things.

24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleannesse, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:

25 Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more then the Creatour, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the naturall use into that which is against nature.

27 And likewise also the men, leaving the naturall use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their errour which was meet.

28 And even as they did not like ‖ to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to ‖ a reprobate minde, to do those things which are not convenient:

29 Being filled with all unrighteousnesse, fornication, wickednesse, covetousnesse, maliciousnesse, full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignitie, whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despitefull, proud, boasters, inventers of evil things, disobedient to parents,

31 Without understanding, covenant-breakers, ‖ without naturall affection, implacable, unmercifull:

32 Who knowing the judgement of God (that they which commit such things, are worthy of death) not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

CHAP. II.

1 They that sinne, though they condemne it in others, cannot excuse themselves, 6 and much lesse escape the judgement of God, 9 whether they be Jews or Gentiles. 14 The Gentiles cannot escape, 17 nor yet the Jews, 25 whom their circumcision shall not profit, if they keep not the law.

THerefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thy self: for thou that judgest, doest the same things.

2 But we are sure that the judgement of God is according to truth against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgement of God?

4 Or

---

* Acts 13.2.

† Gr. determined.

‖ Or, to the obedience of faith.

‖ Or, in my spirit.

‖ Or, in you.

‖ Or, in you.

* Habac. 2.4.

‖ Or, to them.

‖ Or, that they may be.

* Psal. 106. 20.

‖ Or, to acknowledge.

‖ Or, a minde void of judgement.

‖ Or, unsociable.

‖ Or, consent with them.

842

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodnesse, and forbearance, and long-suffering, not knowing that the goodnesse of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardnesse and impenitent heart, * treasurest up unto thy self wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgement of God:

* James 5.3.

6 * Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

* Psal.62.12. Matt.16.27. Revel.22.12.

7 To them, who by patient continuance in well-doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortalitie, eternall life:

8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousnesse, indignation, and wrath,

9 Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the † Gentile.

† Gr. Greek.

10 But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the † Gentile.

† Gr. Greek.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law.

13 (For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

14 For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves.

15 Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, ‖ their conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts ‖ the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another)

‖ Or, the conscience witnessing with them.

16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.

17 Behold, thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God:

18 And knowest his will, and ‖ approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law,

‖ Or, between themselves.

19 And art confident that thou thy self art a guide of the blinde, a light of them which are in darknesse,

20 An instructer of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law.

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thy self? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

‖ Or, triest the things that differ.

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest thou God?

24 For the name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is * written.

* Isa. 52. 5. Ezek. 36.20, 23.

25 For circumcision verily profiteth, if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.

26 Therefore, if the uncircumcision keep the righteousnesse of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfill the law, judge thee, who by the letter & circumcision dost transgresse the law?

28 For he is not a Jew which is one outwardly, neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

29 But he is a Jew which is one inwardly, and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men but of God.

CHAP. III.

1 *The Jews prerogative:* 3 *which they have not lost.* 9 *Howbeit, the law convinceth them also of sinne.* 20 *Therefore no flesh is justified by the law,* 28 *but all without difference, by faith onely:* 31 *and yet the law is not abolished.*

WHat advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?

2 Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not beleeve? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar, as it is written, * That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

* Psal. 51.4.

5 But if our unrighteousnesse commend the righteousnesse of God, what shall we say? Is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man)

6 God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?

7 For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?

8 And not rather as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, Let us do evil, that good may come: whose damnation is just.

9 What then? are we better then they? No in no wise: for we have before † proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sinne,

† Gr. charged.

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one:

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they have used deceit, the poison of asps is under their lips:

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternesse.

15 Their feet are swift to shed blood.

16 Destruction and misery are in their wayes:

17 And the way of peace have they not known.

18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become ‖ guilty before God.

‖ Or, subject to the judgement of God.

20 Therefore by the deeds of the law, there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sinne.

21 But now the righteousnesse of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets.

22 Even the righteousnesse of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that beleeve: for there is no difference:

23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.

24 Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:

25 Whom God hath ‖ set forth to be a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousnesse for the ‖ remission of sinnes that are past, through the forbearance of God.

‖ Or, foreordained. ‖ Or, passing over.

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousnesse: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which beleeveth in Jesus.

27 Where

27 Where is boasting then? it is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.
28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is justified by faith, without the deeds of the law.
29 Is he the God of the Jews only? is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:
30 Seeing it is one God which shall justifie the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.
31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Abrahams faith was imputed to him for righteousnesse, 10 before he was circumcised. 13 By faith onely he and his seed received the promise. 16 Abraham is the father of all that beleeve. 24 Our faith also shall be imputed to us for righteousnesse.

WHat shall we say then, that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?
2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory, but not before God.
3 For what saith the scripture? Abraham beleeved God, and it was counted unto him for righteousnesse.
4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.
5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeveth on him that justifieth the ungodly; his faith is counted for righteousnesse.
6 Even as David also describeth the blessednesse of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousnesse without works,
7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sinnes are covered.
8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sinne.
9 Cometh this blessednesse then upon the circumcision onely, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousnesse.
10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.
11 And he received the signe of circumcision, a seal of the righteousnesse of the faith, which he had yet being uncircumcised that he might be the father of all them that beleeve, though they be not circumcised, that righteousnesse might be imputed unto them also:
12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision onely, but also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.
13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousnesse of faith.
14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect.
15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.
16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace, to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that onely which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all,
17 (As it is written, * I have made thee a father of many nations) ‖ before him whom he beleeved, even God who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were:

* Gen. 17. 5. Or, like unto him.

18 Who against hope, beleeved in hope, that he might become the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken, * So shall thy seed be.
19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred yeare old, neither yet the deadnesse of Sara's wombe.
20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God:
21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform.
22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousnesse.
23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him:
24 But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we beleeve on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead,
25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

* Gen. 15. 5.

CHAP. V.

1 Being justified by faith, we have peace with God, 2 and joy in our hope, 3 that sith we were reconciled by his bloud, when we were enemies, 10 we shall much more be saved being reconciled. 12 As sinne and death came by Adam, 17 so much more righteousnesse and life by Jesus Christ. 20 Where sinne abounded, grace did superabound.

THerefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God, through our Lord Jesus Christ.
2 By whom also we have accesse by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoyce in hope of the glory of God.
3 And not onely so, but we glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience:
4 And patience, experience: and experience, hope:
5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost, which is given unto us.
6 For when we were yet without strength, ‖ in due time Christ died for the ungodly.
7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.
8 But God commendeth his love toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.
9 Much more then, being now justified by his bloud, we shall be saved from wrath through him.
10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne: much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.
11 And not onely so, but we also joy in God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.
12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into the world, and death by sinne: and so death passed upon all men, ‖ for that all have sinned.
13 For until the law sinne was in the world: but sinne is not imputed when there is no law.
14 Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adams transgression, who

‖ Or, according to the time.

‖ Or, in whom.

844

who is the figure of him that was to come?

15 But not as the offence, ſo alſo is the free gift. For if through the offence of one, many be dead; much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jeſus Chriſt, hath abounded unto many.

16 And not as it was by one that ſinned, ſo is the gift: for the iudgement was by one to condemnation: but the free gift is of many offences unto juſtification.

17 For if || by one mans offence, death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteouſneſſe, ſhall reigne in life by one, Jeſus Chriſt.

|| Or, by one offence.

18 Therefore as || by the offence of one, iudgement came upon all men to condemnation: even ſo || by the righteouſneſſe of one, the free gift came upon all men unto juſtification of life.

|| Or, by one offence. || Or, by one righteouſneſſe.

19 For as by one mans diſobedience many were made ſinners: ſo by the obedience of one, ſhall many be made righteous.

20 Moreover, the law entred, that the offence might abound: but where ſinne abounded, grace did much more abound,

21 That as ſinne hath reigned unto death; even ſo might grace reigne through righteouſneſſe unto eternall life, by Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 We may not live in ſinne, 2 for we are dead unto it, 3 as appeareth by our baptiſme. 12 Let not ſinne reigne any more, 18 becauſe we have yeelded our ſelves to the ſervice of righteouſneſſe, 23 and for that death is the wages of ſinne.

WHat ſhall we ſay then? ſhall we continue in ſinne, that grace may abound?

2 God forbid: how ſhall we that are dead to ſinne, live any longer therein?

|| Or, are.

3 Know ye not, that ſo many of us as || were baptized into Jeſus Chriſt, were baptized into his death?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptiſme into death, that like as Chriſt was raiſed up from the dead by the glory of the Father: even ſo we alſo ſhould walk in newneſſe of life.

5 For if we have been planted together in the likeneſſe of his death: we ſhall be alſo in the likeneſſe of his reſurrection:

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of ſinne might be deſtroyed, that henceforth we ſhould not ſerve ſinne.

† Gr. juſtified.

7 For he that is dead, is † freed from ſinne.

8 Now if we be dead with Chriſt, we believe that we ſhall alſo live with him:

9 Knowing that Chriſt being raiſed from the dead, dieth no more, death hath no more dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, he died unto ſinne once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.

11 Likewiſe reckon ye alſo your ſelves to be dead indeed unto ſinne: but alive unto God through Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

12 Let not ſinne therefore reigne in your mortall body, that ye ſhould obey it in the luſts thereof.

† Gr arms or weapons.

13 Neither yeeld ye your members as † inſtruments of unrighteouſneſſe unto ſinne: but yeeld your ſelves unto God, as thoſe that are alive from the dead, and your members as inſtruments of righteouſneſſe unto God.

14 For ſinne ſhall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then? ſhall we ſinne, becauſe we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yeeld your ſelves ſervants to obey, his ſervants ye are to whom ye obey: whether of ſinne unto death, or of obedience unto righteouſneſſe?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the ſervants of ſinne, but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine † which was delivered you.

† Gr. whereto ye were delivered.

18 Being then made free from ſinne, ye became the ſervants of righteouſneſſe.

19 I ſpeak after the manner of men, becauſe of the infirmity of your fleſh: for as ye have yeelded your members ſervants to uncleanneſſe and to iniquity, unto iniquity, even ſo now yeeld your members ſervants to righteouſneſſe, unto holineſſe.

20 For when ye were the ſervants of ſinne, ye were free † from righteouſneſſe.

† Gr. to righteouſneſſe.

21 What fruit had ye then in thoſe things, whereof ye are now aſhamed? for the end of thoſe things is death.

22 But now being made free from ſinne, and become ſervants to God, ye have your fruit unto holineſſe, and the end everlaſting life.

23 For the wages of ſinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life, through Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

1 No law hath power over a man longer then he liveth. 4 But we are dead to the law. 7 Yet is not the law ſinne, 12 but holy, juſt, good, 16 as I acknowledge who am grieved becauſe I cannot keep it

KNow ye not, brethren, (for I ſpeak to them that know the law) how that the law hath dominion over a man, as long as he liveth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to her husband ſo long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, ſhe is looſed from the law of her husband.

3 So then if while her husband liveth, ſhe be married to another man, ſhe ſhall be called an adultereſſe: but if her husband be dead, ſhe is free from that law; ſo that ſhe is no adultereſſe, though ſhe be married to another man.

4 Wherefore my brethren, ye alſo are become dead to the law by the body of Chriſt, that ye ſhould be married to another, even to him who is raiſed from the dead, that we ſhould bring forth fruit unto God.

5 For when we were in the fleſh, the † motions of ſinnes which were by the law, did work in our members, to bring forth fruit unto death.

† Gr. paſſions.

6 But now we are delivered from the law, || that being dead wherein we were held, that we ſhould ſerve in newneſſe of ſpirit, and not in the oldneſſe of the letter.

|| Or, being dead to that

7 What ſhall we ſay then? is the law ſinne? God forbid. Nay, I had not known ſinne, but by the law: for I had not known || luſt, except the law had ſaid, Thou ſhalt not covet.

|| Or, concupiſcence.

8 But ſinne taking occaſion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiſcence. For without the law ſinne was dead.

9 For I was alive without the law once, but when the commandment came, ſinne revived, and I died.

10 And the commandment which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.

11 For ſinne taking occaſion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it ſlew me.

12 Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and juſt, and good.

13 Was then that which is good, made death unto me? God forbid. But ſinne that it might

appeare

appeare sinne, working death in me by that which is good: that sinne by the commandment might become exceeding sinfull.

14 For we know that the law is spirituall: but I am carnall, sold under sinne.

15 For that which I do, I † allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.

16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that do it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me, but how to perform that which is good, I finde not.

19 For the good that I would, I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then a law, that when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God, after the inward man.

23 But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my minde, and bringing me into captivitie to the law of sinne, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who shall deliver me from ‖ the body of this death!

25 I thank God, through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then, with the minde I my self serve the law of God: but with the flesh, the law of sinne.

CHAP. VIII.

1 They that are in Christ, and live according to the Spirit, are free from condemnation. 5, 13 What harm cometh of the flesh, 6, 14 and what good of the Spirit, 17 and what of being Gods childe, 19 whose glorious deliverance all things long for, 29 was beforehand decreed from God. 38 What can sever us from his love?

THere is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life, in Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the law of sinne and death.

3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Sonne, in the likenesse of sinfull flesh, and ‖ for sinne condemned sinne in the flesh:

4 That the righteousnesse of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, do minde the things of the flesh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.

6 For † to be carnally minded, is death; but † to be spiritually minded, is life and peace:

7 Because † the carnall minde is enmitie against God; for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God.

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sinne: but the Spirit is life, because of righteousnesse.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raised up Jesus from the dead, dwell in you: he that raised up Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies, † by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, we are debters, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortifie the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15 For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear: but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The Spirit it self beareth witnesse with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heires: heires of God, and joynt heires with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sonnes of God.

20 For the creature was made subject to vanitie, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope:

21 Because the creature it self also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious libertie of the children of God.

22 For we know that ‖ the whole creation groneth, and travaileth in pain together until now.

23 And not only they, but our selves also which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we our selves grone within our selves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the * redemption of our body.

24 For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen, is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit it self maketh intercession for us with gronings which cannot be uttered.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the minde of the Spirit, ‖ because he maketh intercession for the saints, according to the will of God.

28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Sonne, that he might be the first-born among many brethren.

30 Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? If God be for us, who can be against us?

32 He that spared not his own Sonne, but delivered him up for us all: how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? It is God that justifieth:

34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distresse, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or peril, or sword?

36 (As

845 † Or, because of his Spirit.

‖ Or, this body of death.

† Or, know.

‖ Or, by a sacrifice for sinne.

† Gr. the minding of the flesh.

† Gr. the minding of the Spirit.

† Gr. the minding of the flesh.

‖ Or, every creature.

* Luke 21. 28.

‖ Or, that.

846

36 (As it is written, * For thy sake we are killed all the day long, we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter)

37 Nay in all these things we are more then conquerers, through him that loved us.

38 For I am perswaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

* Psal. 44. 22.

CHAP. IX.

1 Paul is sory for the Jews. 7 All the seed of Abraham were not the children of the promise. 18 God hath mercy upon whom he will. 21 The potter may do with his clay what he list. 25 The calling of the Gentiles and rejecting of the Jews were foretold. 32 The cause why so few Jews embraced the righteousnesse of faith.

I Say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost,

2 That I have great heavinesse and continuall sorrow in my heart.

3 For I could wish that my self were ‖ accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsmen according to the flesh:

‖ *Or*, separated.

4 Who are Israelites: to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the ‖ covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises:

‖ *Or*, testaments.

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel:

7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but in * Isaac shall thy seed be called.

* Gen. 21. 12.

8 That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

9 For this is the word of promise, * At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a sonne.

* Gen. 18. 10

10 And not onely this, but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac,

11 (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth)

* Gen. 25. 23

‖ *Or*, greater.

‖ *Or*, lesser.

12 It was said unto her, The * ‖ elder shall serve the ‖ younger.

* Mal. 1. 2, 3

13 As it is written, * Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.

14 What shall we say then? is there unrighteousnesse with God? God forbid.

* Exod. 33. 19.

15 For he saith to Moses, * I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

* Exod. 9. 16

17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, * Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then unto me, Why doth he yet finde fault? for who hath resisted his will?

‖ *Or*, answereth again, *or* disputest with God.

20 Nay but O man, who art thou that ‖ repliest against God? * shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

* Isa. 45. 9.

21 Hath not the * potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

* Jer. 18. 6. Wisd. 15. 7.

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath ‖ fitted to destruction:

‖ *Or*, made up.

23 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory?

24 Even us whom he hath called, not of the Jews onely, but also of the Gentiles.

25 As he saith also in Osee, * I will call them my people, which were not my people: and her, beloved, which was not beloved.

* Hos. 2. 23. 1. Pet. 2. 10.

26 * And it shall come to passe, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called, the children of the living God.

* Hos. 1. 10.

27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, * Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved.

* Isa. 10. 22, 23.

28 For he will finish ‖ the work, and cut it short in righteousnesse: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

‖ *Or*, the account.

29 And as Esaias said before, * Except the Lord of sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha.

* Isa. 1. 9.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not after righteousnesse, have attained to righteousnesse, even the righteousnesse which is of faith:

31 But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousnesse, hath not attained to the law of righteousnesse.

32 Wherefore? Because they sought it, not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law: for they stumbled at that stumbling stone,

* Isa. 8. 14. and 28. 16. 1. Pet. 2. 6.

33 As it is written, * Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on him, shall not be ‖ ashamed.

‖ *Or*, confounded.

CHAP. X.

5 The scripture sheweth the difference betwixt the righteousnesse of the law, and this of faith, 11 and that all, both Jew and Gentile, that beleeve, shall not be confounded, 18 and that the Gentiles shall receive the word, and beleeve. 19 Israel was not ignorant of these things.

BRethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2 For I bear them record, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousnesse, and going about to establish their own righteousnesse, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousnesse of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousnesse to every one that believeth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousnesse which is of the law, that * the man which doth those things shall live by them.

* Lev. 18. 5. Ezek. 20. 11. Gal. 3. 12.

6 But the righteousnesse which is of faith, speaketh on this wise, * Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is to bring Christ down from above)

* Deut. 30. 12.

7 Or who shall descend into the deep? (that is to bring up Christ again from the dead)

8 But what saith it? * The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is the word of faith which we preach,

* Deut. 30. 14.

9 That if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the

the Lord Jesus, and shalt beleeve in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man beleeveth unto righteousnesse, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

11 For the scripture saith, * Whosoever beleeveth on him, shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon him.

13 * For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord, shall be saved:

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not beleeved? and how shall they beleeve in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they heare without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, * How beautifull are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

16 But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, * Lord, who hath beleeved † our ‖ report?

17 So then, faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.

18 But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, * their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world.

19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First, Moses saith, * I will provoke you to jealousie by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, * I was found of them that sought me not: I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.

21 But to Israel he saith, * All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.

CHAP. XI.

1 God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elected though the rest were hardened. 16 There is hope of their conversion. 18 The Gentiles may not insult upon them. 27 For there is a promise of their salvation. 33 Gods judgements are unsearchable.

I Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wote ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3 * Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine altars, and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? * I have reserved to my self seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for, but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were ‖ blinded:

8 According as it is written, * God hath given them the spirit of ‖ slumber, * eyes that they should not see, and eares that they should not heare unto this day.

9 And David saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling block, and a recompense unto them.

10 * Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bowe down their back alway.

11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid: but rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousie.

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the ‖ diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse?

13 For I speak to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any means I may provoke to emulation, them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world: what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first-fruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde olive-tree, wert graffed in ‖ amongst them, and with them partakest of the root and fatnesse of the olive-tree:

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be graffed in.

20 Well: because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded, but fear.

21 For if God spared not the naturall branches, take heed lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodnesse, and severity of God: on them which fell, severity; but towards thee, goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be graffed in: for God is able to graffe them in again.

24 For if thou were cut out of the olive-tree which is wilde by nature, and wert graffed contrary to nature into a good olive-tree: how much more shall these which be the naturall branches, be graffed into their own olive-tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mysterie (lest ye should be wise in your own conceits) that ‖ blindnesse in part is happened to Israel, untill the fulnesse of the Gentiles be come in.

26 And so all Israel shall be saved; as it is written, * There shall come out of Sion the deliverer, and shall turn away ungodlinesse from Jacob.

27 For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sinnes.

28 As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For as ye in times past have not ‖ beleeved God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief:

31 Even so have these also now not ‖ beleeved that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy.

32 For God hath ‖ concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdome and knowledge of God! how unsearchable

847

* Isa. 28. 16.
* Joel 2. 32. Acts 2. 21.
* Isa. 52. 7. Nahum 1. 15
* Isa. 53. 1. John 12. 38.
† Gr. the hearing of us.
‖ Or, preaching.
* Psal. 19. 4.
* Deut. 32. 21.
* Isa. 65. 1.
* Isa. 65. 2.
‖ Or, hardened.
* Isa. 29. 10.
‖ Or, remorse.
* Isa. 6. 9.
* Psal. 69. 22.
* Psal. 69. 23.
‖ Or, decay, or losse.
‖ Or, for them.
‖ Or, hardnesse.
* Isa. 59. 20.
‖ Or, obeyed.
‖ Or, obeyed.
‖ Or, shut them all up together.

are his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 * For who hath known the minde of the Lord, or who hath been his counseller?

35 Or who hath first given to him, and it shall be recompensed unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

* Isa. 40. 13. Wisd. 9. 13. 1. Cor. 2. 16.

CHAP. XII.

1 Gods mercies must move us to please God. 3 No man must think too well of himself. 6 but attend every one on that calling wherein he is placed. 9 Love, and many other duties are required of us. 19 Revenge is specially forbidden.

I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly then he ought to think, but to think † soberly according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

† Gr. to sobriety.

4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the same office:

5 So we being many are one body in Christ, and every one members one of another.

6 Having then gifts, differing according to the grace that is given to us, whether prophesie, let us prophesie according to the proportion of faith.

7 Or ministery, let us wait on our ministring: or he that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that ‖ giveth, let him do it ‖ with simplicity: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulnesse.

‖ Or, imparteth.

‖ Or, liberally.

9 Let love be without dissimulation: abhorre that which is evil, cleave to that which is good.

10 Be kindly affectioned one to another, ‖ with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another.

‖ Or, in the love of the brethren.

11 Not slothfull in businesse: fervent in spirit, serving the Lord.

12 Rejoycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing instant in prayer.

13 Distributing to the necessity of saints, given to hospitality.

14 Blesse them which persecute you, blesse and curse not.

15 Rejoyce with them that do rejoyce, and weep with them that weep.

16 Be of the same minde one towards another. Minde not high things, but ‖ condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.

‖ Gr, be contented with mean things.

17 Recompense to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your selves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord.

* Deut. 32. 35.

20 * Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him: if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

* Prov. 25. 21.

21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Subjection, and many other duties we owe to the magistrates. 8 Love is the fulfilling of the law. 11 Gluttony and drunkennesse, and the works of darknesse, are out of season in the time of the gospel.

LEt every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be, are ‖ ordained of God.

‖ Or, ordered.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receive to themselves damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terrour to good works, but to the evil: wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good: but if thou do that which is evil, be afraid: for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doth evil.

5 Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not onely for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are Gods ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.

7 Render therefore to all their dues, tribute to whom tribute is due, custome to whom custome, fear to whom fear, honour to whom honour.

8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another, hath fulfilled the law.

9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witnesse, Thou shalt not covet: and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

11 And that, knowing the time that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer then when we beleeved.

12 The night is farre spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darknesse, and let us put on the armour of light.

13 Let us walk ‖ honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkennesse, not in chambering and wantonnesse, not in strife and envying.

‖ Or, decently.

14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof.

CHAP. XIIII.

3 Men may not contemne nor condemne one the other for things indifferent: 13 but take heed that they give no offence in them: 15 For that the apostle proveth unlawfull by many reasons.

HIm that is weak in the faith receive you, but ‖ not to doubtfull disputations.

‖ Or, not to judge his doubtfull thoughts.

2 For one beleeveth that he may eat all things: another who is weak, eateth herbs.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, judge him that eateth. For God hath received him.

4 Who art thou that judgest another mans servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be ‖ fully perswaded in his own minde.

‖ Or, fully assured.

6 He that ‖ regardeth the day, regardeth it unto

‖ Or, observeth.

unto the Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks: and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks.

7 For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord: and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.

10 But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? * we shall all stand before the judgement-seat of Christ.

*2.Cor.5.10.

11 For it is written, * As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bowe to me, and every tongue shall confesse to God.

*Isa.45.23.

12 So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God:

13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block, or an occasion to fall in his brothers way.

14 I know, and am perswaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing † unclean of it self: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be † unclean, to him it is unclean.

†Gr. common.

†Gr. common.

15 But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not † charitably. * Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died.

† Gr. according to charitie.

16 Let not then your good be evil spoken of.

*1.Cor.8.11

17 For the kingdome of God is not meat and drink, but righteousnesse and peace, and joy in the holy Ghost.

18 For he that in these things serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved of men.

19 Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.

*Tit.1.15.

20 For meat destroy not the work of God. * All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence.

*1.Cor.8.13

21 It is good neither to eat * flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.

22 Hast thou faith? have it to thy self before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.

‖Or, discerneth and putteth a difference between meats

23 And he that ‖ doubteth, is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith, is sinne.

CHAP. XV.

1 The strong must bear with the weak. 2 We may not please our selves, 3 for Christ did not so, 7 but receive one the other, as Christ did us all, 8 both Jews, 9 and Gentiles. 15 Paul excuseth his writing, 28 and promiseth to see them, 30 and requesteth their prayers.

WE then that are strong, ought to bear the infirmities of the weak, and not to please our selves.

2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for his good to edification.

3 For even Christ pleased not himself, but as it is written, * The reproches of them that reproched thee fell on me.

*Psal.69.9.

4 For whatsoever things were written afore-time, were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.

5 * Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to be like minded one towards another, according to Christ Jesus:

*Or, after the example of.

6 That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorifie God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us, to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercy, as it is written, * For this cause I will confesse to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name.

*Psal.18.49

10 And again he saith, * Rejoyce ye Gentiles with his people.

*Deut.32.43.

11 And again, * Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud him all ye people.

*Psal.117.1

12 And again Esaias saith, * There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reigne over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

*Isa.11.10.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my self also am perswaded of you my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnesse, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you, in some sort, as putting you in minde, because of the grace that is given to me of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the gospel of God, that the ‖ offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

‖Or, sacrificing.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Jesus Christ, in those things which pertain to God.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things, which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient by word and deed,

19 Through mighty signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God, so that from Jerusalem and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon another mans foundation:

21 But as it is written, * To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see: and they that have not heard, shall understand.

*Isa.52.15.

22 For which cause also I have been ‖ much hindred from coming to you.

‖Or, many wayes, or often times.

23 But now having no more place in these parts, and having a great desire these many yeares to come unto you:

24 Whensoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you: for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled † with your company.

† Gr. with you, Verse 32.

25 But now I go unto Jerusalem, to minister unto the saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certain contribution for the poore saints which are at Jerusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily, and their debters they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spirituall things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnall things.

28 When therefore I have performed this,

850

and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

29 And I am sure that when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulnesse of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christs sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me in your prayers to God for me,

31 That I may be delivered from them that ‖ do not believe in Judea, and that my service which I have for Jerusalem, may be accepted of the saints:

32 That I may come unto you with joy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen.

‖ *Or*, are disobedient.

CHAP. XVI.

3 Paul willeth the brethren to greet many, 17 and adviseth them to take heed of those which cause dissension and offences, 21 and after sundry salutations endeth with praise and thanks to God.

I Commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever businesse she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of my self also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus:

4 (Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles)

5 Likewise greet the church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloved Epenetus, who is the first-fruits of Achaia unto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia my kinsmen and my fellow-prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus ‖ houshold.

11 Salute Herodian my kinsman. Greet them that be of the ‖ houshold of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

‖ *Or*, friends.

‖ *Or*, friends.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned, and avoid them.

18 For they that are such, serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly, and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and ‖ simple concerning evil.

‖ *Or*, harmlesse.

20 And the God of peace shall ‖ bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

‖ *Or*, tread.

21 Timotheus my work-fellow, and Lucius and Jason and Sosipater my kinsmen salute you.

22 I Tertius, who wrote this epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine host, and of the whole church saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel and the preaching of Jesus Christ, (according to the revelation of the mystery which was kept secret since the world began,

26 But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith)

27 To God only wise, be glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe servant of the church at Cenchrea.

The first epistle of Paul the apostle, to the *CORINTHIANS*.

CHAP. I.

After his salutation and thanksgiving, 10 he exhorteth them to unity, 12 and reproveth their dissensions. 18 God destroyeth the wisdome of the wise 21 by the foolishnesse of preaching, and 26 calleth not the wise, mighty, and noble, but 27, 28 the foolish, weak, and men of no account.

PAul called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother,

2 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, * called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours:

* Acts 15. 9.
* Rom. 1. 7.

3 Grace be unto you, and peace from God our father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ,

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you.

7 So that ye come behinde in no gift; waiting for the ‡ coming of our Lord Jesus Christ,

‡ *Or*, revelation.

8 Who

8 Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

*1. Thes. 5. 24.

9 * God is faithfull, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Sonne Jesus Christ our Lord.

10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no † divisions among you: but that ye be perfectly joyned together in the same minde, and in the same judgement.

† Gr. schismes.

11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul, and I of * Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ.

* Acts 18. 24

13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

14 I thank God, that I baptized none of you, but * Crispus and Gaius.

* Acts 18. 8.

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine own name.

16 And I baptized also the houshold of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: * not with wisdome of ‖ words, lest the crosse of Christ should be made of none effect.

*2. Pet. 1. 16. ‖ Or, speech.

18 For the preaching of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnesse: but unto us which are saved, it is the * power of God.

*Rom. 1. 16.

19 For it is written, * I will destroy the wisdome of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent.

*Isa. 29. 14.

20 * Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdome of this world?

*Isa. 33. 18.

21 * For after that, in the wisdome of God, the world by wisdome knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishnesse of preaching to save them that believe.

*Rom. 1. 20.

22 For the * Jews require a signe, and the Greeks seek after wisdome.

*Matt. 12. 38.

23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks, foolishnesse:

24 But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the power of God, and the wisdome of God.

25 Because the foolishnesse of God is wiser then men: and the weaknesse of God is stronger then men.

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise: and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty:

28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are:

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdome, and righteousnesse, and sanctification, and redemption:

*Jer. 9. 23, 24.

31 That according as it is written, * He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

CHAP. II.

He declareth that his preaching, 1 though it bring not excellency of speech, or of 4 humane wisdome: yet consisteth in the 4, 5 power of God: and so farre excelleth 6 the wisdome of this world, and 9 humane sense, as that 14 the naturall man cannot understand it.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, * came not with excellency of speech, or of wisdome, declaring unto you the testimony of God.

*Chap. 1. 17.

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weaknesse, and in fear, and in much trembling.

4 And my speech, and my preaching * was not with ‖ enticing words of mans wisdome, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:

*2. Pet. 1. 16. ‖ Or, perswasible. † Gr. be.

5 That your faith should not † stand in the wisdome of men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit we speak wisdome among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdome of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought.

7 But we speak the wisdome of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdome which God ordained before the world unto our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

9 But as it is written, * Eye hath not seen, nor eare heard, neither have entred into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

*Isa. 64. 4.

10 But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

13 * Which things also we speak, not in the words which mans wisdome teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spirituall things with spirituall.

*2. Pet. 1. 16.

14 But the naturall man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishnesse unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

*Prov. 29. 19 ‖ Or, discerneth. ‖ Or, discerned.

15 * But he that is spirituall, ‖ judgeth all things, yet he himself is ‖ judged of no man.

16 * For who hath known the minde of the Lord, that he † may instruct him? But we have the minde of Christ.

*Isa. 40. 13. Rom. 11. 34. † Gr. shall.

CHAP. III.

2 Milk is fit for children. 3 Strife and division, arguments of a fleshly minde. 7 He that planteth, and he that watereth, is nothing. 9 The ministers are Gods fellow-workmen. 11 Christ the only foundation. 16 Men the temples of God, 17 which must be kept holy. 19 The wisdome of this world is foolishnesse with God.

AND I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spirituall, but as unto carnall, even as unto babes in Christ.

2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat:

852

for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and ‖ divisions, are ye not carnall, and walk † as men?

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollo, are ye not carnall?

5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollo, but ministers by whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

6 I have planted, Apollo watered: but God gave the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that watereth: but God that giveth the increase.

8 Now he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one: * and every man shall receive his own reward, according to his own labour.

9 For we are labourers together with God, ye are Gods ‖ husbandry, ye are Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise master-builder I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build upon this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble:

13 Every mans work shall be made manifest. For the day shall declare it, because it † shall be revealed by fire, and the fire shall try every mans work, of what sort it is.

14 If any mans work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

15 If any mans work shall be burnt, he shall suffer losse: but he himself shall be saved: yet so, as by fire.

16 * Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man ‖ defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

18 Let no man deceive himself: if any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisdome of this world is foolishnesse with God: for it is written, * He taketh the wise in their own craftinesse.

20 And again, * The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men, for all things are yours.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours:

23 And ye are Christs, and Christ is Gods.

CHAP. IIII.

1 In what account the ministers ought to be had. 7 We have nothing which we have not received. 9 The apostles spectacles to the world, angels and men, 13 the filth and off-scouring of the world: 15 yet our fathers in Christ, 16 whom we ought to follow.

LEt a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithfull.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of mans † judgement: yea, I judge not mine own self.

4 For I know nothing by my self, yet am I not hereby justified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

5 * Therefore judge nothing before the time, untill the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darknesse, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to my self, and to Apollo, for your sakes: that ye might learn in us not to think of men, above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

7 For who † maketh thee to differ from another? And what hast thou that thou didst not receive? now if thou didst receive it, why doest thou glory as if thou hadst not received it?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us, and I would to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.

9 For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a † spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

10 We are fools for Christs sake, but ye are wise in Christ: we are weak, but ye are strong: ye are honourable, but we are despised.

11 Even unto this present houre we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place:

12 * And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we blesse: being persecuted, we suffer it:

13 * Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the world, and are the off-scouring of all things unto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as my beloved sonnes I warn you.

15 For though you have ten thousand instructours in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved sonne, and faithfull in the Lord, who shal bring you into remembrance of my wayes which be in Christ, as I teach every where in every church.

18 Now some are puffed up as though I would not come to you.

19 * But I will come to you shortly, * if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech of them which are puffed up, but the power.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but in power.

21 What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekenesse?

CHAP. V.

1 The incestuous person 6 is cause rather of shame unto them, then of rejoycing. 7 The old leaven is to be purged out. 10 Hainous offenders are to be shunned and avoided.

IT is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication, as is not so much as named amongst the Gentiles, that one should have his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed, might be taken away from among you.

3 * For I verily as absent in body, but present in spirit, have ‖ judged already, as though I were present,

*Or, factions. † Gr. according to man

*Psal. 62. 12. Gal. 6. 5.

‖ Or, tillage.

† Gr. is revealed.

*Chap. 6. 19

‖ Or, destroy.

*Job 5. 13.

*Psal. 94. 11

† Gr. day.

† Gr. distinguisheth thee.

† Gr. theatre

* Acts 20. 34. 1. Thes. 2. 9. 2. Thes. 3. 8. *Matth. 5. 44

* Acts 19. 21 * Jam. 4. 15.

* Col. 2. 5. ‖ Or, determined.

present, concerning him that hath so done this deed;

4 In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ,

5 * To deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

6 Your glorying is not good: * know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?

7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passeover ‖ is sacrificed for us.

8 Therefore let us keep ‖ the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickednesse: but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I wrote unto you in an epistle, not to company with fornicatours.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicatours of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world.

11 But now I have written unto you, not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicatour, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, with such an one, no not to eat.

12 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within?

13 But them that are without, God judgeth. Therefore put away from among your selves that wicked person.

* 1. Tim. 1. 20

* Gal. 5. 9.

‖ Or, is slain.

‖ Or, holy day

CHAP. VI.

1 *The Corinthians must not vex their brethren, in going to law with them:* 6 *especially under infidels.* 9 *The unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdome of God.* 15 *Our bodies are the members of Christ,* 19 *and temples of the holy Ghost:* 16, 17 *they must not therefore be defiled.*

DAre any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have judgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.

5 I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man amongst you? no not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelevers.

7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another: why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer your selves to be defrauded?

8 Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that your brethren.

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdome of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankinde,

10 Nor theeves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdome of God.

11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are lawfull unto me, but all things are not ‖ expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the bodie is not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power.

15 Know ye not, that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not that he which is joyned to an harlot, is one body? for two (saith he) shall be one flesh.

17 But he that is joyned unto the Lord, is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication. Every sinne that a man doeth, is without the bodie: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his own body.

19 What, know ye not that your body is the temple of the holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorifie God in your bodie, and in your spirit, which are Gods.

‖ Or, profitable.

CHAP. VII.

2 *He treateth of marriage,* 4 *shewing it to be a remedie against fornication:* 10 *and that the bond thereof ought not lightly to be dissolved.* 18, 20 *Every man must be content with his vocation.* 25 *Virginitie wherefore to be embraced.* 35 *And for what respects we may either marry, or abstain from marrying.*

NOw concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her own bodie, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own bodie, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give your selves to fasting and prayer, and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speak this by permission, and not of commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I my self: but every man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I.

9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marrie then to burn.

10 And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

854

12 But to the reſt ſpeak I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that beleeveth not, and ſhe be pleaſed to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeveth not, and if he be pleaſed to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbeleeving husband is ſanctified by the wife, and the unbeleeving wife is ſanctified by the husband; elſe were your children unclean, but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbeleeving depart, let him depart. A brother or a ſiſter is not under bondage in ſuch caſes: but God hath called us † to peace.

† Gr. in peace.

16 For what knoweſt thou, O wife, whether thou ſhalt ſave thy husband? or how knoweſt thou, O man, whether thou ſhalt ſave thy wife?

17 But as God hath diſtributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, ſo let him walk: and ſo ordain I in all churches.

18 Is any man called being circumciſed? let him not become uncircumciſed: is any called in uncircumciſion? let him not become circumciſed.

19 Circumciſion is nothing, and uncircumciſion is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the ſame calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a ſervant? care not for it; but if thou mayeſt be made free, uſe it rather.

† Gr. made free.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a ſervant, is the Lords † freeman: likewiſe alſo he that is called being free, is Chriſts ſervant.

23 Ye are bought with a price, be not ye the ſervants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgement as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithfull.

‖ Or, neceſſity

26 I ſuppoſe therefore that this is good for the preſent ‖ diſtreſſe, I ſay, that it is good for a man ſo to be.

27 Art thou bound unto a wife? ſeek not to be looſed. Art thou looſed from a wife? ſeek not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou haſt not ſinned; and if a virgin marry, ſhe hath not ſinned: nevertheleſſe, ſuch ſhall have trouble in the fleſh: but I ſpare you.

29 But this I ſay, brethren, The time is ſhort. It remaineth, that both they that have wives, be as though they had none;

30 And they that weep, as though they wept not: and they that rejoyce, as though they rejoyced not: and they that buy, as though they poſſeſſed not;

31 And they that uſe this world, as not abuſing it: for the faſhion of this world paſſeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulneſſe. He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may pleaſe the Lord:

33 But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may pleaſe his wife.

34 There is difference alſo between a wife and a virgin: the unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that ſhe may be holy, both in body and in ſpirit: but ſhe that is married, careth for the things of the world, how ſhe may pleaſe her husband.

35 And this I ſpeak for your own profit, not that I may caſt a ſnare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend upon the Lord without diſtraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himſelf uncomely toward his virgin, if ſhe paſſe the flowre of her age, and need ſo require, let him do what he will, he ſinneth not: let them marry.

37 Nevertheleſſe, he that ſtandeth ſtedfaſt in his heart, having no neceſsity, but hath power over his own will, and hath ſo decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, doth well.

38 So then, he that giveth her in marriage, doth well: but he that giveth her not in marriage, doth better.

39 The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, ſhe is at liberty to be married to whom ſhe will, onely in the Lord.

40 But ſhe is happier if ſhe ſo abide, after my judgement: and I think alſo that I have the ſpirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 To abſtain from meats offered to idols. 8, 9 We muſt not abuſe our Chriſtian libertie, to the offence of our brethren: 11 but muſt bridle our knowledge with charitie.

NOw as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love God, the ſame is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of thoſe things that are offered in ſacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many)

6 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we ‖ in him, and one Lord Jeſus Chriſt, by whom are all things, and we by him.

‖ Or, for him, Rom. 11, 36.

7 Howbeit there is not in every man that knowledge: for ſome with conſcience of the idol unto this houre, eat it as a thing offered unto an idol; and their conſcience being weak, is defiled.

8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither if we eat, ‖ are we the better: neither if we eat not, ‖ are we the worſe.

‖ Or, have we the more.

‖ Or, have we the leſſe.

9 But take heed leſt by any means this ‖ liberty of yours become a ſtumbling block to them that are weak.

‖ Or, power.

10 For if any man ſee thee which haſt knowledge ſit at meat in the idols temple, ſhall not the conſcience of him which is weak be † emboldened to eat thoſe things which are offered to idols;

† Gr. edified.

11 And through thy knowledge ſhall the weak brother periſh, for whom Chriſt died?

12 But when ye ſinne ſo againſt the brethren, and wound their weak conſcience, ye ſinne againſt Chriſt.

13 Wherefore if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no fleſh while the world ſtandeth, leſt I make my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

1 He sheweth his liberty, 7 and that the minister ought to live by the gospel: 15 yet that himself hath of his own accord abstained 18 to be either chargeable unto them, 22 or offensive unto any, in matters indifferent. 24 Our life is like unto a race.

AM I not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not you my work in the Lord?

2 If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtlesse I am to you: for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answer to them that do examine me, is this,

4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?

5 Have we not power to lead about a sister a ‖ wife as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

6 Or I only and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?

9 For it is written in the law of Moses, *Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes, no doubt, this is written: that he that ploweth should plow in hope: and that he that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

11 * If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?

12 If others be partakers of this power over you, are not we rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power: but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.

13 * Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things ‖ live of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

14 Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.

15 But I have used none of these things. Neither have I written these things, that it should be so done unto me: for it were better for me to die, then that any man should make my glorying void.

16 For though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me, yea, wo is unto me if I preach not the gospel.

17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the gospel is committed unto me.

18 What is my reward then? verily that when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet have I made my self servant unto all, that I might gain the more.

20 And unto the Jews, I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews; to them that are under the law, as under the law, that I might gain them that are under the law:

21 To them that are without law, as without law, (being not without law to God, but under the law to Christ) that I might gain them that are without law.

22 To the weak became I as weak, that I might gain the weak: I am made all things to all men, that I might by all means save some.

23 And this I do for the gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not that they which run in a race, run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run that ye may obtain.

25 And every man that striveth for the masterie, is temperate in all things: now, they do it to obtain a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly: so fight I, not as one that beateth the aire:

27 But I keep under my bodie, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means when I have preached to others, I my self should be a cast-away.

CHAP. X.

1 The sacraments of the Jews, 6 are types of ours, 7 and their punishments, 11 examples for us. 14 We must flee from idolatrie. 21 We must not make the Lords table the table of devils: 24 and in things indifferent we must have regard of our brethren.

MOreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea:

2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud, and in the sea:

3 And did all eat the same spiritual meat,

4 And did all drink the same spirituall drink: (for they drank of that spirituall Rock that ‖ followed them: and that Rock was Christ)

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wildernesse.

6 Now these things were † our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as * they also lusted.

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them, as it is written, * The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and * fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, * and were destroyed of serpents.

10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them also murmured, and were * destroyed of the destroyer.

11 Now all these things happened unto them for ‖ ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but ‖ such as is common to man: but God is faithfull, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

14 Wherefore my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

15 I speak as to wise men: judge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the bloud of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

*Deut. 25. 4.

* Rom. 15. 27.

*Deut. 18. 1.

‖ Or, woman

‖ Or, feed.

‖ Or, went with them.

† Gr. our figures.

* Psal. 106. 14.

*Exod. 32. 6.

*Num. 25. 9.

*Num. 21. 6.

* Num. 14. 37.

‖ Or, types.

‖ Or, moderate.

856

17 For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices, partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?

20 But I say, that the things which the Gentiles * sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.

*Deut. 32.17 Psal 106.37

21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of devils.

22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousie? are we stronger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seek his own: but every man anothers wealth.

25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

* Deut. 10.14 Psal. 24.1.

26 For * the earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.

27 If any of them that beleeve not, bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not, for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. * The earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof.

*Deut. 10.14 Psal. 24.1.

29 Conscience I say, not thine own, but of the others: for why is my liberty judged of another mans conscience?

30 For, if I by ‖ grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that, for which I give thanks?

‖ Or, thanksgiving.

31 Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

32 Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the † Gentiles, nor to the church of God:

† Gr. Greeks

33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.

CHAP. XI.

1 He reproveth them because in holy assemblies 4 their men prayed with their heads covered, and 6 women with their heads uncovered, 17 and because generally their meetings were not for the better, but for the worse, as 21 namely in profaning with their own feasts the Lords supper. 23 Lastly, he calleth them to the first institution thereof.

BE ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that you remember me in all things, and keep the ‖ ordinances, as I delivered them to you

‖ Or, traditions.

3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ: and the head of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.

4 Every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.

5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven.

6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.

7 For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman: but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman to have ‖ power on her head, because of the angels

‖ That is, a covering, in signe that she is under the power of her husband.

11 Nevertheless, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: even so is the man also by the woman: but all things of God.

13 Judge in your selves: is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature it self teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?

15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a ‖ covering.

‖ Or, vail.

16 But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custome, neither the churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that you come together not for the better, but for the worse.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be ‖ divisions among you, and I partly beleeve it.

‖ Or, schismes

19 For there must be also ‖ heresies among you, that they which are approved, may be made manifest among you.

‖ Or, sects.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, ‖ this is not to eat the Lords supper.

‖ Or, ye cannot eat.

21 For in eating every one taketh before other, his own supper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 What, have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the church of God, and shame ‖ them that have not? what shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

‖ Or, them that are poore.

23 For I have received of the Lord, that which also I delivered unto you, that the Lord Jesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, took bread:

24 * And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat, this is my body which is broken for you: this do ‖ in remembrance of me.

*Matt. 26.26 Mark 14.22. Luke 22.19.

‖ Or, for a remembrance.

25 After the same manner also he took the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my bloud: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ‖ ye do shew the Lords death till he come.

‖ Or, shew ye.

27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and bloud of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh ‖ damnation to himself, not discerning the Lords body.

‖ Or, judgement.

30 For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.

31 For if we would judge our selves, we should not be judged.

32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore,

33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.

34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home, that ye come not together unto ‖ condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

‖ Or, judgement.

CHAP. XII.

1 Spirituall gifts 4 are divers, 7 yet all to profit withall. 8 And to that end are diversly bestowed. 12 That by the like proportion, as the members of a naturall body tend all to the 16 mutuall decency, 22 service, and 26 succour of the same body: 27 so we should do one for another, to make up the mysticall body of Christ.

NOw concerning spirituall gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumbe idols, even as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus ‖ accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

‖ Or, anathema.

4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit, is given to every man to profit withall.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wisdome, to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit:

9 To another faith by the same Spirit: to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit:

10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophesie, to another discerning of spirits: to another divers kindes of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But all these worketh that one and the self same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ.

13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or † Gentiles, whether we be bond or free: and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

† Gr. Greeks.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the eare shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? if the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now hath God set the members, every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him

19 And if they were all one member, where were the body?

20 But now are they many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again, the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

22 Nay much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary.

23 And those members of the body, which we think to be lesse honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour, and our uncomely parts have more abundant comelinesse.

24 For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked:

25 That there should be no ‖ schisme in the body: but that the members should have the same care one for another.

‖ Or, division

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

28 And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, ‖ diversities of tongues.

‖ Or, kindes.

29 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all ‖ workers of miracles?

‖ Or, powers.

30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 All gifts, 2, 3 how excellent soever, are nothing worth without charitie. 4 The praises thereof, and 13 prelation before hope and faith.

THough I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charitie, I am become as sounding brasse or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I have the gift of prophesie, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge: and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have no charitie, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poore, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charitie suffereth long, and is kinde: charitie envieth not: charitie ‖ vaunteth not it self, is not puffed up,

‖ Or, is not rash.

5 Doth not behave it self unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil,

6 Rejoyceth not in iniquity, but rejoyceth ‖ in the truth:

‖ Or, with the truth.

7 Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charitie never faileth: but whether there be prophesies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I understood as a childe, I ‖ thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

‖ Or, reasoned

12 For now we see through a glasse, † darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known.

† Gr. in a riddle.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three, but the greatest of these is charitie.

CHAP

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Prophesie is commended, 2, 3, 4 and preferred before speaking with tongues, 6 by a comparison drawn from musicall instruments. 12 Both must be referred to edification, 22 as to their true and proper end. 26 The true use of each is taught, 29 and the abuse taxed. 34 Women are forbidden to speak in the church.

FOllow after charitie, and desire spirituall gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man † understandeth him: howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

† Gr. heareth

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself: but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church.

5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth, than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine?

7 And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the ‖ sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped?

‖ Or, tunes.

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battell?

9 So likewise you, except ye utter by the tongue words † easie to be understood, how shall it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the aire.

† Gr. significant.

10 There are, it may be, so many kindes of voices in the world, and none of them are without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh, a Barbarian, and he that speaketh shall be a Barbarian unto me.

12 Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous † of spirituall gifts, seek that ye may excell to the edifying of the church.

† Gr. of spirits.

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitfull.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.

16 Else when thou shalt blesse with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned, say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than you all:

19 Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

† Gr. perfect, or of a ripe age.

20 Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit, in malice be ye children, but in understanding be † men.

21 In the law it is * written, With men of other tongues and other lips, will I speak unto this people: and yet for all that will they not heare me, saith the Lord.

* Isa. 28. 11.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a signe, not to them that believe, but to them that believe not: but prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe:

23 If therefore the whole church be come together into one place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbeleevers, will they not say that ye are mad?

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in one that beleeveth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all.

25 And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so falling down on his face, he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.

26 How is it then brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalme, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation. Let all things be done to edifying.

27 If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church, and let him speak to himself, and to God.

29 Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge.

30 If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.

33 For God is not the authour of † confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.

† Gr. tumult, or unquietnesse.

34 Let your women keep silence in the churches, for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience, as also saith the * law.

* Gen. 3. 16

35 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it unto you onely?

37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledge that the things that I write unto you, are the commandments of the Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, covet to prophesie, and forbid not to speak with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently, and in order.

CHAP. XV.

3 By Christs resurrection, 12 he proveth the necessity of our resurrection, against all such as deny the resurrection of the body. 21 The fruit, 35 and manner thereof, 51 and of the changing of them that shall be found alive at the last day.

MOreover brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also you have received, and wherein ye stand.

2 By which also ye are saved, if ye ‖ keep in memory † what I preached unto you, unlesse ye have beleeved in vain.

‖ Or, hold fast.

† Gr. by what speech

3 For I delivered unto you first of all, that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sinnes according to the scriptures:

4 And

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:
5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve.
6 After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.
7 After that, he was seen of James, then of all the apostles.
8 And last of all he was seen of me also, as of ‖ one born out of due time.
9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God.
10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me, was not in vain: but I laboured more abundantly then they all; yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me:
11 Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so ye beleeved.
12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?
13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.
14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain.
15 Yea and we are found false witnesses of God, because we have testified of God, that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.
16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.
17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain, ye are yet in your sinnes.
18 Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ, are perished.
19 If in this life onely we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.
20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept.
21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.
22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.
23 But every man in his own order. Christ the first-fruits, afterward they that are Christs, at his coming.
24 Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdome to God even the Father, when he shall have put down all rule, and all authoritie, and power.
25 For he must reigne, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.
26 The last enemie that shall be destroyed, is death.
27 For he hath put all things under his feet; but when he saith all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him.
28 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Sonne also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.
29 Else what shall they do, which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?
30 And why stand we in jeopardie every houre?
31 I protest by ‖ your rejoycing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.
32 If ‖ after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die
33 Be not deceived: evill communications corrupt good manners.
34 Awake to righteousnesse, and sinne not: for some have not the knowledge of God, I speak this to your shame.
35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what bodie do they come?
36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened except it die.
37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that bodie that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain.
38 But God giveth it a bodie as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own bodie.
39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one kinde of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.
40 There are also celestiall bodies, and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestiall is one, and the glory of the terrestriall is another.
41 There is one glory of the sunne, and an other glory of the moon, and another glory of the starres: for one starre differeth from another starre in glory.
42 So also is the resurrection of the dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.
43 It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it is sown in weaknesse, it is raised in power.
44 It is sown a naturall bodie, it is raised a spirituall bodie. There is a naturall bodie and there is a spirituall bodie.
45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam was made a quickning spirit.
46 Howbeit that was not first which is spirituall: but that which is naturall, and afterward that which is spirituall.
47 The first man is of the earth earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.
48 As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy; and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.
49 And as we have born the image of the earthy, we shall also beare the image of the heavenly.
50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and bloud cannot inherit the kingdome of God: neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.
51 Behold, I shew you a mysterie: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,
52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump, (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed)
53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortalitie.
54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortall shall have put on immortalitie, then shall be brought to passe the saying that is written, * Death is swallowed up in victorie.
55 O death, where is thy sting? O ‖ grave, where is thy victorie?
56 The sting of death is sinne, and the strength of sinne is the law.
57 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victorie, through our Lord Jesus Christ.
58 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAP.

‖ Or, an abortive.

‖ Some reade our.

‖ Or, to speak after the manner of men.

* Hosea 13. 14.

‖ Or, hell.

860

CHAP. XVI.

1 He exhorteth them to relieve the want of the brethren at Jerusalem: 10 commendeth Timothie: 13 and after friendly admonitions, 16 shutteth up his epistle with divers salutations.

NOw concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever you shall approve by your letters, them will I send to bring your † liberalitie unto Jerusalem.

† Gr. gift.

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall passe through Macedonia: (for I do passe through Macedonia)

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey, whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarrie a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus untill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, as I also do.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you, with the brethren, but his will was not at all to come at this time: but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charitie.

15 I beseech you brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministerie of the saints)

16 That ye submit your selves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they have supplied.

18 For they have refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you: greet ye one another with an holy kisse.

21 The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

22 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be anathema, Maran-atha.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

¶ The first epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, by Stephanas and Fortunatus and Achaicus and Timotheus.

The second epistle of Paul the apostle, to the *CORINTHIANS.*

CHAP. I.

3 The apostle encourageth them against troubles, by the comforts and deliverances which God had given him, as in all his afflictions, 8 so particularly in his late danger in Asia: 12 and calling both his own conscience, and theirs to witnesse of his sincere manner of preaching the immutable truth of the gospel, 15 he excuseth his not coming to them, as proceeding not of lightnesse, but of his lenitie towards them.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothie our brother, unto the church of God which is at Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia.

2 Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we our selves are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

‖ Or, is wrought.

6 And whether we be afflicted, it is for your consolation and salvation, which ‖ is effectuall in the enduring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life.

9 But we had the ‖ sentence of death in our selves, that we should not trust in our selves, but in God which raiseth the dead.

‖ Or, answer.

10 Who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us:

11 You also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift bestowed upon us by the means of many persons, thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

12 For our rejoycing is this, the testimonie of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdome, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards.

13 For we write none other things unto you, then what you reade or acknowledge, and I trust you shall acknowledge even to the end.

14 As

14 As also you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoycing, even as ye also are ours in the day of the Lord Jesus.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that you might have a second ‖ benefit:

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightnesse? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay?

18 But as God is true, our ‖ word toward you, was not yea and nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him amen, unto the glory of God by us.

21 Now he which stablisheth us with you, in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God.

22 Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

1 Having shewed the reason why he came not to them, 6 he requireth them to forgive and to comfort that excommunicated person, 3 even as himself also upon his true repentance had forgiven him: 12 declaring withall why he departed from Troas to Macedonia, 14 and the happie successe which God gave to his preaching in all places.

BUt I determined this with my self, that I would not come again to you in heavinesse.

2 For if I make you sory, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made sory by me?

3 And I wrote this same unto you, lest when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoyce, having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote unto you with many teares, not that you should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all.

6 Sufficient to such a man is this ‖ punishment which was inflicted of many.

7 So that contrariwise, ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that ye would confirm your love towards him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it, ‖ in the person of Christ;

11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christs gospel, and a doore was opened unto me of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother, but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks be unto God which alwayes causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his knowledge by us in every place.

15 For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish.

16 To the one we are the savour of death unto death; and to the other, the savour of life unto life: and who is sufficient for these things?

17 For we are not as many, which ‖ corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 Lest their false teachers should charge him with vainglory, he sheweth the faith and graces of the Corinthians to be a sufficient commendation of his ministery. 6 Whereupon entring a comparison between the ministers of the law, and of the gospel, 12 he proveth that his ministery is so farre the more excellent, as the gospel of life and liberty is more glorious then the law of condemnation.

DO we begin again to commend our selves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you?

2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men.

3 For as much as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ, ministred by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.

4 And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward.

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selves to think any thing as of our selves: but our sufficiency is of God.

6 Who also hath made us able ministers of the new testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit ‖ giveth life.

7 But if the ministration of death written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his countenance, which glory was to be done away:

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation be glory, much more doth the ministration of righteousnesse exceed in glory.

10 For even that which was made glorious, had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious.

12 Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great ‖ plainnesse of speech.

13 And not as Moses which put a vail over his

‖ Or, grace

‖ Or, preaching

‖ Or, deal deceitfully with.

‖ Or, quickneth.

‖ Or, censure.

‖ Or, in the sight.

‖ Or, boldnes

862

his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished.

14 But their mindes were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away, in the reading of the old testament: which vail is done away in Christ.

15 But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart.

16 Nevertheless, when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

18 But we all with open face, beholding as in a glasse the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as || by the Spirit of the Lord.

|| *Or*, of the Lord the Spirit.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He declareth how he hath used all sincerity and faithfull diligence in preaching the gospel: 7 and how the troubles and persecutions which he daily endured for the same, did redound to the praise of Gods power, 12 to the benefit of the church, 16 and to the apostles own eternall glory.

THerefore seeing we have this ministery, as we have received mercy we faint not,

2 But have renounced the hidden things of † dishonesty, not walking in craftinesse, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the truth, commending our selves to every mans conscience in the sight of God.

† *Gr.* shame.

3 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost.

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the mindes of them which beleeve not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.

5 For we preach not our selves, but Christ Jesus the Lord, and our selves your servants for Jesus sake.

6 For God who commanded the light to shine out of darkenesse, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

8 We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but || not in despair;

|| *Or*, not altogether without help or means.

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed;

10 Alwayes bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

11 For we which live, are alway delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

13 We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I beleeved, and therefore have I spoken: we also beleeve, and therefore speak,

*Psal. 116. 10

14 Knowing, that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might through the thanksgiving of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause we faint not; but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a farre more exceeding and eternall weight of glory;

18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen, are temporall, but the things which are not seen, are eternall.

CHAP. V.

1 That in his assured hope of immortall glory, 9 and in expectance of it, and of the generall judgement, he laboureth to keep a good conscience, 12 not that he may herein boast of himself, 14 but as one that having received life from Christ, endeavoureth to live as a new creature to Christ onely, 18 and by his ministery of reconciliation to reconcile others also in Christ to God.

FOr we know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternall in the heavens.

2 For in this we grone earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven.

3 If so be that being clothed, we shall not be found naked.

4 For we that are in this tabernacle do grone, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us for the self same thing, is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are alwayes confident, knowing that whilest we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walk by faith, not by sight)

8 We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

9 Wherefore we || labour, that whether present or absent we may be accepted of him.

|| *Or*, endeavour.

10 For we must all appeare before the judgement-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terrour of the Lord, we perswade men; but we are made manifest unto God, and I trust also, are made manifest in your consciences.

12 For we commend not our selves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that you may have somewhat to answer them which glory † in appearance, and not in heart.

† *Gr.* in the face.

13 For whether we be beside our selves, it is to God: or whether we be sober, it is for your cause.

14 For the love of Christ constraineth us, because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead:

15 And that he died for all, that they which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, || he is a new creature: * old things are past away, behold, all things are become new.

|| *Or*, let him be.

*Isa. 43. 19. Revel. 21. 5.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministery of reconciliation,

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses

† Gr. put in us.

trespasses unto them, and hath † committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then we are ambassadours for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us; we pray you in Christs stead, be ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sinne for us, who knew no sinne; that we might be made the righteousnesse of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

That he hath approved himself a faithfull minister of Christ, both by his exhortations, 3 and by integrity of life, 4 and by patient enduring all kindes of affliction and disgraces for the gospel. 10 Of which he speaketh the more boldly amongst them, because his heart is open to them: 13 and he expecteth the like affection from them again: 14 exhorting to flee the society and pollution of idolaters, as being themselves temples of the living God.

WE then as workers together with him beseech you also, that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.

2 (For he saith, * I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time: behold, now is the day of salvation)

* Isa. 49. 8.

3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministery be not blamed:

4 But in all things † approving our selves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

† Gr. commending.

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, ‖ in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings,

‖ Or, in tossings to and fro.

6 By pureness, by knowledge, by long-suffering, by kindness, by the holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousnesse, on the right hand, and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by evill report and good report: as deceivers, and yet true:

9 As unknown, and yet well known: as dying, and behold, we live: as chastened, and not killed:

10 As sorrowfull, yet alway rejoycing: as poore, yet making many rich: as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitned in us, but ye are straitned in your own bowels.

13 Now for a recompense in the same, (I speak as unto my children) be ye also enlarged.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelevers: for what fellowship hath righteousnesse with unrighteousnesse? and what communion hath light with darknesse?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, * I will dwell in them, and walk in them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

* Levit. 26. 12

17 * Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you,

* Isa. 52. 11.

18 * And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

* Jer. 31. 1.

CHAP. VII.

1 He proceedeth in exhorting them to puritie of life, 2 and to bear him like affection as he doth to them. 3 Whereof, lest he might seem to doubt, he declareth what comfort he took in his afflictions, by the report which Titus gave of their godly sorrow, which his former epistle had wrought in them, 13 and of their loving kindnesse and obedience towards Titus, answerable to his former boastings of them.

HAving therefore these promises (dearely beloved) let us cleanse our selves from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holinesse in the fear of God.

2 Receive us, we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I speak not this to condemne you: for I have said before, that you are in our hearts to die and live with you.

4 Great is my boldnesse of speech toward you, great is my glorying of you, I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side, without were fightings, within were fears.

6 Nevertheless, God that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus.

7 And not by his coming onely, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent minde toward me, so that I rejoyced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle made you sorry, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I rejoyce, not that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry ‖ after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

‖ Or, according to God.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, this self-same thing that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulnesse it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of your selves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge: in all things ye have approved your selves to be cleare in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appeare unto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort, yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting which I made before Titus is found a truth.

† Gr. bowels.

15 And his † inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilest he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him.

16 I rejoyce therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He stirreth them up to a liberall contribution for the poore saints at Jerusalem, by the example of the Macedonians, 7 by commendation of their former forwardnesse, 9 by the example of Christ, 14 and by the spirituall profit that shall redound to themselves thereby: 16 commending to them the integrity and willingnesse of Titus, and those other brethren, who upon his request, exhortation, and commendation, were purposely come to them for this businesse.

MOreover brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia:

2 How that in a great triall of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, abounded unto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to their power (I bear record) yea and beyond their power they were willing of themselves:

4 Praying us with much intreaty, that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministring to the saints.

5 And this they did, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

6 Insomuch that we desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same grace also.

7 Therefore as ye abound in every thing, in faith, in utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us; see that ye abound in this grace also.

8 I speak not by commandment, but by occasion of the forwardnesse of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poore, that ye through his poverty might be rich.

10 And herein I give my advice, for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not onely to do, but also to be † forward a yeare ago.

† Gr. willing.

11 Now therefore perform the doing of it, that as there was a readinesse to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which you have.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For I mean not that other men be eased, and you burdened:

14 But by an equality: that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want, that there may be equality.

*Exod. 16. 18

15 As it is written, He * that had gathered much, had nothing over, and he that had gathered little, had no lack.

16 But thanks be to God, which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed, he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.

18 And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the gospel, throughout all the churches:

19 And not that onely, but who was also chosen of the churches to travell with us with this ‖ grace which is administred by us to the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your ready minde.

‖ Or, gift.

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is administred by us:

21 Providing for honest things, not onely in the sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

22 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which ‖ I have in you.

‖ Or, he hath.

23 Whether any do enquire of Titus, he is my partner, and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren be enquired of, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

CHAP. IX.

1 He yeeldeth the reason why, though he knew their forwardnesse, yet he sent Titus and his brethren beforehand. 6 And he proceedeth in stirring them up to a bountifull almes, as being but a kinde of sowing of seed, 10 which shall return a great increase to them, 13 and occasion a great sacrifice of thanksgivings unto God.

FOr as touching the ministring to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your minde, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a yeare ago, and your zeal hath provoked very many.

3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf, that, as I said, ye may be ready:

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you unprepared, we (that we say not, you) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up beforehand your † bounty, ‖ whereof ye had notice before, that the same might be ready, as a matter of bounty, not of covetousnesse.

† Gr. blessing
‖ Or, which hath been so much spoken of before.

6 But this, I say, He which soweth sparingly, shall reap sparingly: and he which soweth bountifully, shall reap bountifully.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for * God loveth a cheerfull giver.

*Prov. 11. 25 Rom. 12. 8. Ecclus 35. 9.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you, that ye always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.

9 (As it is written, * He hath dispersed abroad: he hath given to the poore: his righteousnesse remaineth for ever.

*Psal. 112. 9.

10 Now he that * ministreth seed to the sower, both minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousnesse)

*Isa. 55. 10.

11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifulnesse, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God.

12 For the administration of this service, not onely supplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God.

13 Whiles by the experiment of this ministration they glorifie God for your professed subjection unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them, and unto all men:

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Against the false apostles, who disgraced the weakneſſe of his perſon and bodily preſence, he ſetteth out the ſpirituall might and authoritie, with which he is armed against all adverſary powers, 7 aſſuring them that at his coming he will be found as mighty in word, as he is now in writing being abſent: 12 and withall taxing them for reaching out themſelves beyond their compaſſe, and vaunting themſelves into other mens labours.

NOw I Paul my ſelf beſeech you, by the meekneſſe and gentleneſſe of Chriſt, who ‖ *Or*, in outward appearance. ‖ in preſence am baſe among you, but being abſent am bold toward you.

2 But I beſeech you, that I may not be bold when I am preſent, with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold againſt ſome which ‖ *Or*, reckon. ‖ think of us, as if we walked according to the fleſh.

3 For though we walk in the fleſh, we do not warre after the fleſh:

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mighty ‖ *Or*, to God. ‖ through God to the pulling down of ſtrong holds)

5 Caſting down ‖ *Or*, reaſonings. ‖ imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it ſelf againſt the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Chriſt:

6 And having in a readineſſe to revenge all diſobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? if any man truſt to himſelf, that he is Chriſts, let him of himſelf think this again, that as he is Chriſts, even ſo are we Chriſts.

8 For though I ſhould boaſt ſomewhat more of our authority, (which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your deſtruction) I ſhould not be aſhamed:

9 That I may not ſeem as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (ſay they) are weighty and powerfull, but his bodily preſence is weak, and his ſpeech contemptible:

11 Let ſuch an one think this, that ſuch as we are in word by letters when we are abſent, ſuch will we be alſo in deed when we are preſent.

12 For we dare not make our ſelves of the number, or compare our ſelves with ſome that commend themſelves: but they meaſuring themſelves by themſelves, and comparing themſelves amongſt themſelves, ‖ *Or*, underſtand it not. ‖ are not wiſe.

13 But we will not boaſt of things without our meaſure, but according to the meaſure of the ‖ *Or*, line. ‖ rule, which God hath diſtributed to us, a meaſure to reach even unto you.

14 For we ſtretch not our ſelves beyond our meaſure, as though we reached not unto you, for we are come as farre as to you alſo, in preaching the goſpel of Chriſt:

15 Not boaſting of things without our meaſure, that is, of other mens labours, but having hope, when your faith is increaſed, that we ſhall be ‖ *Or*, magnified in you. ‖ enlarged by you according to our rule abundantly,

16 To preach the goſpel in the regions beyond you, and not to boaſt in another mans ‖ *Or*, rule. ‖ line of things made ready to our hand.

17 * But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord. * Jer. 9. 24. 1. Cor. 1. 31.

18 For not he that commendeth himſelf is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

CHAP. XI.

1 Out of his jealouſie over the Corinthians, who ſeemed to make more account of the falſe apoſtles, then of him, he entreth into a forced commendation of himſelf, 5 of his equality with the chief apoſtles, 7 of his preaching the goſpel to them freely, and without any their charge, 13 ſhewing that he was not inferiour to thoſe deceitfull workers, in any legall prerogative; 23 and in the ſervice of Chriſt, and in all kinde of ſufferings for his miniſtery, farre ſuperiour.

WOuld to God you could bear with me a little in my folly, and indeed ‖ *Or*, you do bear with me. ‖ bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealouſie, for I have eſpouſed you to one husband, that I may preſent you as a chaſte virgin to Chriſt.

3 But I fear leſt by any means, as the ſerpent beguiled Eve through his ſubtilty, ſo your mindes ſhould be corrupted from the ſimplicity that is in Chriſt.

4 For if he that cometh, preacheth another Jeſus whom we have not preached, or if ye receive another ſpirit, which ye have not received, or another goſpel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him.

5 For I ſuppoſe I was not a whit behinde the very chiefeſt apoſtles.

6 But though I be rude in ſpeech, yet not in knowledge; but we have been throughly made manifeſt among you in all things.

7 Have I committed an offence in abaſing my ſelf that you might be exalted, becauſe I have preached to you the goſpel of God freely?

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages of them to do you ſervice.

9 And when I was preſent with you and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking to me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, ſupplied, and in all things I have kept my ſelf from being burdenſome unto you, and ſo will I keep my ſelf.

10 As the truth of Chriſt is in me, † no man ſhall ſtop me of this boaſting in the regions of Achaia. † *Gr.* this boaſting ſhall not be ſtopped in me.

11 Wherefore? becauſe I love you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occaſion from them which deſire occaſion, that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

13 For ſuch are falſe apoſtles, deceitfull workers, transforming themſelves into the apoſtles of Chriſt.

14 And no marvel, for Satan himſelf is transformed into an angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his miniſters alſo be transformed as the miniſters of righteouſneſſe, whoſe end ſhall be according to their works.

16 I ſay again, Let no man think me a fool: if otherwiſe, yet as a fool ‖ *Or*, ſuffer. ‖ receive me, that I may boaſt my ſelf a little.

17 That which I ſpeak, I ſpeak it not after the Lord, but as it were fooliſhly in this confidence of boaſting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the fleſh, I will glory alſo.

19 For ye ſuffer fools gladly, ſeeing ye your ſelves are wiſe.

20 For ye ſuffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devours you, if a man take of you,

866

you, if a man exalt himself, if a man smite you on the face.

21 I speak as concerning reproch, as though we had been weak: howbeit, wherein soever any is bold, I speak foolishly, I am bold also.

22 Are they Hebrews? so am I: are they Israelites? so am I: are they the seed of Abraham? so am I:

23 Are they ministers of Christ? I speak as a fool, I am more: in labours more abundant: in stripes above measure: in prisons more frequent: in deaths oft.

* Deut. 25.3. 24 Of the Jews five times received I * fourty stripes save one.

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered shipwrack: a night and a day I have been in the deep.

26 In journeying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren,

27 In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness.

28 Besides those things that are without, that which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damascus the governour under Aretas the king, kept the city of the Damascens with a garrison, desirous to apprehend me.

33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 For commending of his apostleship, though he might glory of his wonderfull revelations, 9 yet he rather chooseth to glory of his infirmities, 11 blaming them for forcing him to this vain boasting. 14 He promiseth to come to them again: but yet altogether in the affection of a father, 20 although he feareth he shall to his grief finde many offenders, and publike disorders there.

IT is not expedient for me doubtlesse to glory, I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Christ above fourteen yeares ago (whether in the body, I cannot tell, or whether out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth) such an one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth)

4 How that he was caught up into paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not ‖ lawfull for a man to utter.

‖ Or, possible.

5 Of such an one will I glory, yet of my self I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a fool: for I will say the truth. But now I forbear, lest any man should think of me above that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me:

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a * thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

* See Ezek. 28.24.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christs sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.

11 I am become a fool in glorying, ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behinde the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truely the signes of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signes and wonders, and mighty deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferiour to other churches, except it be that I my self was not burdensome to you? forgive me this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdensome to you; for I seek not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will very gladly spend and be spent for † you, though the more abundantly I love you, the lesse I be loved.

† Gr. your souls.

16 But be it so, I did not burden you: nevertheless being crafty, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?

18 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother: did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?

19 Again, think you that we excuse our selves unto you? we speak before God in Christ: but we do all things, dearely beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear lest when I come I shall not finde you such as I would, and that I shall be found unto you such as ye would not, lest there be debates, envyings, wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults,

21 And lest when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness, and fornication, and lasciviousness which they have committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 He threatneth severity, and the power of his apostleship against obstinate sinners: 5 and adviseth them to a triall of their faith, 7 and to reformation of their sinnes before his coming, 11 he concludeth his epistle with a generall exhortation and a prayer.

THIS is the third time I am coming to you: in the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

2 I told you before, and foretell you as if I were present the second time, and being absent now I write to them which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come again I will not spare:

3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God: for we also are weak ‖ in him, but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you.

‖ Or, with him.

5 Examine your selves, whether ye be in the faith;

faith: prove your own selves: know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil, not that we should appeare approved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weak, and ye are strong: and this also we wish, even your perfection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being present, I should use sharpnesse, according to the power which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell: Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one minde, live in peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kisse.

13 All the saints salute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second epistle to the Corinthians, was written from Philippi a city of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

6 He wondereth that they have so soon left him and the gospel, 8 and accurseth those that preach any other gospel then he did. 11 He learned the gospel not of men, but of God: 13 and sheweth what he was before his calling, 17 and what he did presently after it.

PAUL an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead,

2 And all the brethren which are with me, unto the churches of Galatia:

3 Grace be to you and peace, from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ,

4 Who gave himself for our sinnes, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God, and our Father:

5 To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

6 I marvel, that ye are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, & would pervert the gospel of Christ.

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you, then that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you, then that ye have received, let him be accursed.

10 For do I now perswade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

11 But I certifie you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past, in the Jews religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the Jews religion, above many my † equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

† Gr. equals in yeares.

15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers wombe, and called me by his grace,

16 To reveal his Sonne in me, that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and bloud:

17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which were apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.

18 Then after three yeares I ‖ went up to Jerusalem, to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen dayes.

‖ Or, returned

19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia,

22 And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea, which were in Christ.

23 But they had heard onely, That he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAP. II.

1 He sheweth when he went up again to Jerusalem, and for what purpose: and that Titus was not circumcised: 11 and that he resisted Peter, and told him the reason, 14 why he and other, being Jews, do beleeve in Christ to be justified by faith, and not by works: 20 and that they live not in sinne, who are so justified.

THen fourteen yeares after, I went up again to Jerusalem, with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but ‖ privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, or had run in vain.

‖ Or, severally.

3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spie out our liberty, which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage.

5 To whom we gave place by subjection, no not for an houre, that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

6 But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed to be somewhat, in conference added nothing to me.

868

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter:

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles)

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

10 Only they would that we should remember the poore, the same which I also was forward to do.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have beleeved in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

17 But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we our selves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sinne? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make my self a transgressour.

19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Sonne of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

21 I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousnesse come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

CHAP. III.

1 He asketh what moved them to leave the faith, and hang upon the law. 6 They that beleeve are justified, 9 and blessed with Abraham. 10 And this he sheweth by many reasons.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

‖ Or, so great.

4 Have ye suffered ‖ so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain.

5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

6 Even as Abraham beleeved God, and it was ‖ accounted to him for righteousnesse.

‖ Or, imputed.

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And the scripture foreseeing that God would justifie the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, * In thee shall all nations be blessed.

* Gen. 12. 3.

9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, * Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

* Deut. 27. 26.

11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, * the just shall live by faith.

* Hab. 2. 4. Rom. 1. 17.

12 And the law is not of faith: but, * the man that doth them shall live in them.

* Lev. 18. 5.

13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, * Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree:

* Deut. 21. 23.

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ: that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men: though it be but a mans ‖ covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.

‖ Or, testament.

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many, but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this I say that the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law which was foure hundred and thirty yeares after, cannot disannull, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made, and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediatour.

20 Now a mediatour is not a mediatour of one, but God is one.

21 Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousnesse should have been by the law.

22 But the scripture hath concluded all under sinne, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that beleeve.

23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith, which should afterwards be revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.

29 And if ye be Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heirs according to the promise.

CHAP.

CHAP. IIII.

1 We were under the law till Christ came, as the heir is under his guardian till he be of age. 5 But Christ freed us from the law: 7 therefore we are servants no longer to it. 14 He remembreth their good will to him, and his to them. 22 and sheweth that we are the sonnes of Abraham by the free-woman.

NOw I say that the heir, as long as he is a childe, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all,

2 But is under tutours and governours, untill the time appointed of the father.

3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the ‖ elements of the world:

‖ *Or*, rudiments.

4 But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, made under the law,

5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sonnes.

6 And because ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a sonne; and if a sonne, then an heir of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye ‖ again to the weak and beggerly ‖ elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage?

‖ *Or*, back.
‖ *Or*, rudiments.

10 Ye observe dayes, and moneths, and times, and yeares.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am; for I am as ye are, ye have not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh, I preached the gospel unto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor rejected, but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Jesus.

15 ‖ Where is then the blessednesse you spake of? for I bear you record, that if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.

‖ *Or*, what was then.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well: yea, they would exclude ‖ you, that you might affect them.

‖ *Or*, us.

18 But it is good to be zealously affected alwayes in a good thing, and not onely when I am present with you.

19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth again untill Christ be formed in you,

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice, for ‖ I stand in doubt of you.

‖ *Or*, I am perplexed for you.

21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not heare the law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sonnes, the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.

23 But he who was of the bond-woman, was born after the flesh: but he of the free-woman was by promise.

24 Which things are an allegory; for these are the two ‖ covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

‖ *Or*, testaments.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and ‖ answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

‖ *Or*, is in the same rank with.

26 But Jerusalem which is above, is free, which is the mother of us all.

27 For it is written, * Rejoyce thou barren that bearest not, break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many more children then she which hath an husband.

* Isa. 54. 1.

28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

29 But as then he that was born after the flesh persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.

30 Nevertheless, what saith the scripture? * Cast out the bond-woman and her sonne: for the sonne of the bond woman shall not be heir with the sonne of the free-woman.

* Gen. 21. 10

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bond-woman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

1 He moveth them to stand in their libertie, 3 and not to observe circumcision: 13 but rather love, which is the summe of the law. 19 He reckoneth up the works of the flesh, 22 and the fruits of the Spirit, 25 and exhorteth to walk in the Spirit.

STand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not intangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For I testifie again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtour to do the whole law.

4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousnesse by faith.

6 For in Jesus Christ, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love.

7 Ye did run well, ‖ who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truth?

‖ *Or*, who did drive you back.

8 This perswasion cometh not of him that calleth you.

9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded; but he that troubleth you, shall bear his judgement, whosoever he be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the offence of the crosse ceased.

12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.

13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; onely use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word even in this, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

* Lev. 19. 18 Matt. 22. 39.

15 But if ye bite and devoure one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

16 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ‖ ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.

‖ *Or*, fulfill not.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh, and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18 But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, Adultery, fornication, uncleanesse, lasciviousnesse,

20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Envy-

870

21 Envyings, murders, drunkennesse, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things, shall not inherit the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, faith,

23 Meekenesse, temperance: against such there is no law.

24 And they that are Christs, have crucified the flesh, with the || affections and lusts.

25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

26 Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

|| Or, passions.

CHAP. VI.

1 He moveth them to deal mildely with a brother that hath slipped, 2 and to bear one anothers burden, 6 to be liberall to their teachers, 9 and not weary of well-doing. 12 He sheweth what they intend that preach circumcision. 14 He glorieth in nothing, save in the crosse of Christ.

BRethren, || if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spirituall, restore such an one in the spirit of meekenesse, considering thy self, lest thou also be tempted.

|| Or, although.

2 Bear ye one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ.

3 For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.

4 But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoycing in himself alone, and not in another.

5 For every man shall bear his own burden.

6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth, in all good things.

7 Be not deceived, God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

9 And let us not be weary in well-doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

10 As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the houshold of faith.

11 Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.

12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised: onely lest they should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law, but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glory save in the crosse of our Lord Jesus Christ, || by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

|| Or, whereby.

15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me; for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Unto the Galatians, written from Rome.

The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the EPHESIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 After the salutation, 3 and thanksgiving for the Ephesians, 4 he treateth of our election, 6 and adoption by grace, 11 which is the true and proper fountain of mans salvation. 13 And because the height of this mysterie cannot easily be attained unto, 16 he praieth that they may come 18 to the full knowledge and 20 possession thereof in Christ.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Jesus:

2 Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spirituall blessings in heavenly || places in Christ:

|| Or, things.

4 According as he hath chosen us in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in love:

5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will:

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved.

7 In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgivenesse of sinnes, according to the riches of his grace,

8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all wisdome and prudence:

9 Having made known unto us the mysterie of his will, according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed in himself.

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in † heaven, and which are on earth, even in him:

† Gr. the heavens.

11 In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him, who worketh all things after the counsel of his own will:

12 That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first || trusted in Christ.

|| Or, hoped.

13 In whom ye also trusted after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, untill the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, & love unto all the saints,

16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdome and revelation, || in the knowledge of him:

|| Or, for the acknowledgement.

18 The

18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened: that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints:
19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power to us-ward who beleeve, according to the working † of his mighty power:
20 Which he wrought in Christ when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,
21 Farre above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come:
22 And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church,
23 Which is his body, the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all.

† Gr. of the might of his power.

CHAP. II.

1 By comparing what we were by 3 nature, with what we are 5 by grace, 10 he declareth, that we are made for good works; and 13 being brought neare by Christ, should not live as 18 Gentiles, and 12 forreiners in time past, but as 19 citizens with the saints, and the family of God.

AND you hath he quickened who were dead in trespasses and sinnes,
2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the aire, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.
3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling † the desires of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.
4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,
5 Even when we were dead in sinnes hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved)
6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.
7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace, in his kindnesse towards us through Christ Jesus.
8 For by grace are ye saved, through faith, and that not of your selves: it is the gift of God:
9 Not of works, lest any man should boast:
10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ‖ ordained that we should walk in them.
11 Wherefore remember that ye being in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands,
12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the common-wealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world.
13 But now in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were farre off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.
14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us:
15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmitie, even the law of commandments, contained in ordinances, for to make in himself, of twain, one new man, so making peace.
16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the crosse, having slain the enmitie ‖ thereby:
17 And came, and preached peace to you which were afarre off, and to them that were nigh.
18 For through him we both have an accesse by one Spirit unto the Father.
19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and forreiners, but fellow-citizens with the saints, and of the houshold of God;
20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone.
21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord:
22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

† Gr. the wills.

‖ Or, prepared.

871

‖ Or, in himself.

CHAP. III.

5 The hidden mystery, 6 that the Gentiles should be saved, 3 was made known to Paul by revelation: 8 and to him was that grace given, that 9 he should preach it. 13 He desireth them not to faint for his tribulation, 14 and prayeth 19 that they may perceive the great love of Christ toward them.

FOr this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles,
2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you-ward:
3 How that by revelation he made known unto me the mysterie, (as I wrote ‖ afore in few words,
4 Whereby when ye reade ye may understand my knowledge in the mysterie of Christ)
5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sonnes of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles & prophets by the Spirit;
6 That the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ, by the gospel:
7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me, by the effectuall working of his power.
8 Unto me, who am lesse then the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ,
9 And to make all men see, what is the fellowship of the mysterie, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ:
10 To the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly places, might be known by the church the manifold wisdome of God,
11 According to the eternall purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:
12 In whom we have boldnesse and accesse with confidence by the faith of him.
13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.
14 For this cause I bowe my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,
15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,
16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might, by his Spirit in the inner man:
17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith, that ye being rooted and grounded in love,
18 May be able to comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height:

‖ Or, a little before.

872

19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulnesse of God.

20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

21 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to unitie, 7 and declareth that God therefore giveth divers 11 gifts unto men, that his church might be 13 edified, and 16 grown up in Christ. 18 He calleth them from the impurity of the Gentiles, 24 to put on the new man, 25 to cast off lying, and 29 corrupt communication.

I Therefore the prisoner ‖ of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

‖ *Or*, in the Lord.

2 With all lowlinesse and meeknesse, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love:

3 Endeavouring to keep the unitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There is one body and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one faith, one baptisme,

6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But unto every one of us is given grace according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he saith, * When he ascended up on high, he led ‖ captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

* Psal. 68. 18

‖ *Or*, a multitude of captives.

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended up farre above all heavens, that he might ‖ fill all things)

‖ *Or*, fulfill.

11 * And he gave some, apostles: and some, prophets: and some, evangelists: and some, pastours and teachers;

* 1. Cor. 12. 28.

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministery, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till we all come ‖ in the unitie of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Sonne of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the ‖ stature of the fulnesse of Christ:

‖ *Or*, into the unitie. ‖ *Or*, age.

14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every winde of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftinesse, whereby they lie in wait to deceive:

15 But ‖ speaking the truth in love may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:

‖ *Or*, being sincere.

16 * From whom the whole body fitly joyned together, and compacted by that which every joynt supplieth, according to the effectuall working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of it self in love.

* Col. 2. 19.

17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk in the vanity of their minde,

18 Having the understanding darkned, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the * ‖ blindnesse of their heart:

* Rom. 1. 21. ‖ *Or*, hardnesse.

19 Who being past feeling, have given themselves over unto lasciviousnesse, to work all uncleanness with greediness.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ:

21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus.

22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation, the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitfull lusts:

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde:

24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousnesse, and ‖ true holinesse.

‖ *Or*, holines of truth.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be ye angry and sinne not, let not the sunne go down upon your wrath:

27 Neither give place to the devil.

28 Let him that stole, steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have ‖ to give to him that needeth.

‖ *Or*, to distribute.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good ‖ to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

‖ *Or*, to edifie profitably.

30 And grieve not the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternesse, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil-speaking be put away from you with all malice.

32 * And be ye kinde one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christs sake hath forgiven you.

* 2. Cor. 2. 10

CHAP. V.

2 After generall exhortations to love, 3 to flee fornication, 4 and all uncleanesse. 7 not to converse with the wicked, 15 to walk warily, and to be 18 filled with the Spirit, 22 he descendeth to the particular duties, how wives ought to obey their husbands, 25 and husbands ought to love their wives, 32 even as Christ doth his church.

BE ye therefore followers of God, as deare children.

2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling savour.

3 But fornication, and all uncleanesse, or covetousnesse, let it not be once named amongst you, as becometh saints:

4 Neither filthinesse, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks.

5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of ‖ disobedience.

‖ *Or*, unbelief

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

8 For ye were sometimes darknesse, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light,

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodnesse, and righteousnesse, and truth)

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord.

11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darknesse, but rather reprove them.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are ‖ reproved, are made manifest

‖ *Or*, discovered.

manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest, is light.

14 Wherefore he saith, *Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

15 *See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise,

16 Redeeming the time, because the dayes are evil.

17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excesse: but be filled with the Spirit:

19 Speaking to your selves in psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing, and making melodie in your heart to the Lord,

20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ,

21 Submitting your selves one to another in the fear of God.

22 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the Saviour of the body.

24 Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it:

26 That he might sanctifie and cleanse it with the washing of water, by the word;

27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blemish.

28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies: he that loveth his wife, loveth himself.

29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh: but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church.

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joyned unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great mysterie: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

33 Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular, so love his wife even as himself, and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 The duty of children toward their parents, 5 of servants toward their masters. 10 Our life is a warfare, 12 not onely against flesh and bloud, but also spirituall enemies. 13 The compleat armour of a Christian, 18 and how it ought to be used. 21 Tychicus is commended.

Children, obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandment with promise)

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.

4 And ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singlenesse of your heart, as unto Christ:

6 Not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart;

7 With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:

8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye masters, do the same things unto them, ‖ forbearing threatning: knowing that ‖ your master also is in heaven, neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and bloud, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkenesse of this world, against ‖ spirituall wickednesse in ‖ high places.

13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and ‖ having done all to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your loyns girt about with truth, and having on the brest-plate of righteousnesse:

15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace.

16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance, and supplication for all saints,

19 And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mysterie of the gospel:

20 For which I am an ambassadour in bonds: that ‖ therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

21 But that ye also may know my affairs, and how I do, Tychicus a beloved brother and faithfull minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things.

22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace be to the brethren, and love with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ ‖ in sincerity. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome unto the Ephesians, by Tychicus.

* Isa. 60. 1.

* Col. 4. 5.

‖ *Or*, moderating.

‖ *Some reade*, both your, and their master.

‖ *Or*, wicked spirits.

‖ *Or*, heavenly.

‖ *Or*, having overcome all.

‖ *Or*, in a chain.

‖ *Or*, thereof.

‖ *Or*, with incorruption.

The

The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 He testifieth his thankfulnesse to God, and his love toward them, for the fruits of their faith, and fellowship in his sufferings, 9 daily praying to him for their increase in grace. 12 He sheweth what good the faith of Christ had received by his troubles at Rome, 21 and how ready he is to glorifie Christ, either by his life or death: 27 exhorting them to unity, 28 and to fortitude in persecution.

PAul and Timotheus the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus, which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons:

2 Grace be unto you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I thank my God upon every ‖ remembrance of you,

4 Alwayes in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy,

5 For your fellowship in the gospel from the first day untill now;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, ‖ will perform it untill the day of Jesus Christ.

7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because ‖ I have you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are ‖ partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and in all ‖ judgement:

10 That ye may ‖ approve things that ‖ are excellent, that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ:

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousnesse, which are by Jesus Christ unto the glory and praise of God.

12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel.

13 So that my bonds ‖ in Christ are manifest in all ‖ the palace, and ‖ in all other places.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Christ even of envie and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely, supposing to adde affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.

18 What then? notwithstanding every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached, and I therein do rejoyce, yea, and will rejoyce.

19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ,

20 According to my earnest expectation, and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldnesse, as alwayes, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life or by death.

21 For to me to live is Christ, & to die is gain.

22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose, I wot not.

23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ, which is farre better:

24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh is more needfull for you.

25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all for your furtherance and joy of faith.

26 That your rejoycing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again.

27 Onely let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ: that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may heare of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one minde, striving together for the faith of the gospel;

28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries, which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of salvation, and that of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not onely to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake,

30 Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now heare to be in me.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to unity, and to all humblenesse of minde, by the example of Christs humility and exaltation: 12 to a carefull proceeding in the way of salvation, that they be as lights to the wicked world, 16 and comforts to him their apostle, who is now ready to be offered up to God. 19 He hopeth to send Timothy to them, whom he greatly commendeth, 25 as Epaphroditus also, whom he presently sendeth to them.

IF there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies;

2 Fulfill ye my joy, that ye be like-minded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one minde.

3 Let nothing be done through strife, or vain glory, but in lowlinesse of minde let each esteem other better then themselves.

4 Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others.

5 Let this minde be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus:

6 Who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equall with God:

7 But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the ‖ likenesse of men.

8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the crosse.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:

10 That at the name of Jesus every knee should

‖ *Or*, mention.

‖ *Or*, will finish it.

‖ *Or*, you have me in your heart. ‖ *Or*, partakers with me of grace.

‖ *Or*, sense. ‖ *Or*, try. ‖ *Or*, differ.

‖ *Or*, for Christ. *Or*, Cesars court. ‖ *Or*, to all others.

‖ *Or*, habit.

should bowe, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth:

11 And that every tongue should confesse, that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloved, as ye have alwayes obeyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in my absence; work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to do of his good pleasure.

14 Do all things without murmurings, and disputings:

15 That ye may be blamelesse, and ‖ harmelesse, the sonnes of God, without rebuke, in the mids of a crooked and perverse nation, among whom ‖ ye shine as lights in the world:

16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may rejoyce in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.

17 Yea, and if I be † offered upon the sacrifice and service of your faith, I joy, and rejoyce with you all.

18 For the same cause also do ye joy, and rejoyce with me.

19 ‖ But I trust in the Lord Jesus, to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state.

20 For I have no man ‖ like-minded, who will naturally care for your state.

21 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christs.

22 But ye know the proof of him, that as a sonne with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.

24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also my self shall come shortly.

25 Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, and fellow-souldier, but your messenger, and he that ministred to my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heavinesse, because that ye had heard that he had been sick.

27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him onely, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him again, ye may rejoyce, and that I may be the lesse sorrowfull.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladnesse, and ‖ hold such in reputation:

30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life to supply your lack of service toward me.

‖ *Or,* sincere.

‖ *Or,* shine ye.

† *Gr.* poured forth.

‖ *Or,* moreover.

‖ *Or,* so deare unto me.

‖ *Or,* honour such.

CHAP. III.

1 He warneth them to beware of the false teachers of the circumcision, 4 shewing that himself hath greater cause then they, to trust in the righteousnesse of the law: 7 which notwithstanding he counteth as dung and losse, to gain Christ and his righteousnesse, 12 therein acknowledging his own imperfection. 15 He exhorteth them to be thus minded, 17 and to imitate him, 18 and to decline the wayes of carnall Christians.

FInally, my brethren, rejoyce in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more.

5 Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews: as touching the law, a Pharisee:

6 Concerning zeal, persecuting the church: touching the righteousnesse which is in the law, blameless.

7 But what things were gain to me, those I counted losse for Christ.

8 Yea doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse, for the excellencie of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the losse of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Christ,

9 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousnesse, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which is of God by faith:

10 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death,

11 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my self to have apprehended; but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behinde, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

14 I presse toward the mark, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

15 Let us therefore as many as be perfect be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

16 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us minde the same thing.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, and mark them which walk so, as ye have us for an ensample.

18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the crosse of Christ:

19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who minde earthly things.)

20 For our conversation is in heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

CHAP. IIII.

1 From particular admonitions 4 he proceedeth to generall exhortations, 10 shewing how he rejoyced at their liberality towards him lying in prison, not so much for the supply of his own wants, as for the grace of God in them: 19 and so he concludeth with prayer and salutations.

THerefore, my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

876

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same minde in the Lord.
3 And I intreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, help those women which laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in the book of life.
4 Rejoyce in the Lord alway: and again I say, Rejoyce.
5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.
6 Be carefull for nothing: but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.
7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and mindes through Christ Jesus.
8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any vertue, and if there be any praise, think on these things.
9 Those things which ye have both learned and received, and heard and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.
10 But I rejoyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me hath flourished again, wherein ye were also carefull, but ye lacked opportunity.
11 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.
12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.
13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.
14 Notwithstanding ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.
15 Now ye Philippians know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me, as concerning giving and receiving, but ye onely.
16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity.
17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.
18 But I have all, and abound, I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God.
19 But my God shall supply all your need according to his riches in glory, by Christ Jesus.
20 Now unto God and our Father be glory for ever and ever. Amen.
21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus: the brethren which are with me greet you.
22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cesars houshold.
23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by Epaphroditus.

|| *Or*, venerable.

|| *Or*, is revived.

|| *Or*, I have received all.

The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the *COLOSSIANS*.

CHAP. I.

1 *After salutation he thanketh God for their faith,* 7 *confirmeth the doctrine of Epaphras,* 9 *prayeth further for their increase in grace,* 14 *describeth the true Christ,* 21 *encourageth them to receive Jesus Christ; and commendeth his own ministery.*

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother,
2 To the saints and faithfull brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
3 We give thanks to God, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying alwayes for you:
4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints;
5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel:
6 Which is come unto you, as it is in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you, since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth.
7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow-servant, who is for you a faithfull minister of Christ:
8 Who also declared unto us your love in the Spirit.
9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdome and spirituall understanding.
10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitfull in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God:
11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulnesse:
12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light:
13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darknesse, and hath translated us into the kingdome of † his deare Sonne.
14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgivenesse of sinnes:
15 Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature.
16 For by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.
17 * And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.
18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead, that || in all things he might have the preeminence.
19 For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulnesse dwell,

20 And

† *Gr.* the Sonne of his love.

* 1.Cor.8.6. John 1.3.

|| *Or*, among all.

20 And (‖ having made peace through the blood of his crosse) by him to reconcile all things unto himself, by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.

‖ Or, making peace.

21 And you that were sometime alienated, and enemies ‖ in your minde by wicked workes, yet now hath he reconciled,

‖ Or, by your minde in wicked works.

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable, and unreproveable in his sight:

23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and setled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven, whereof I Paul am made a minister.

24 Who now rejoyce in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the church.

25 Whereof I am made a minister according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me for you, ‖ to fulfill the word of God:

‖ Or, fully to preach the word of God, Rom. 15. 19.

26 Even the mysterie which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints.

27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mysterie among the Gentiles, which is Christ ‖ in you, the hope of glory.

‖ Or, among you.

28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdome, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

1 He still exhorteth them to be constant in Christ, 8 to beware of philosophie, and vain traditions, 18 worshipping of angels, 20 and legall ceremonies, which are ended in Christ.

FOr I would that ye knew what great ‖ conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh,

‖ Or, fear, or care.

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mysterie of God, and of the Father, and of Christ:

3 ‖ In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdome and knowledge.

‖ Or, wherein

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastnesse of your faith in Christ.

6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him:

7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophie and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the ‖ rudiments of the world, and not after Christ:

‖ Or, elements.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the Godhead bodily.

10 And ye are compleat in him, which is the head of all principality and power.

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sinnes of the flesh, by the circumcision of Christ:

12 Buried with him in baptisme, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your sinnes, and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances, that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his crosse:

15 And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them ‖ in it.

‖ Or, in himself.

16 Let no man therefore judge you ‖ in meat or in drink, or ‖ in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath dayes.

‖ Or, for eating and drinking.

‖ Or, in part.

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but the body is of Christ.

18 Let no man ‖ beguile you of your reward, † in a voluntary humility, and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puft up by his fleshly minde:

‖ Or, judge against you.

† Gr. being a voluntary in humility.

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by joynts and bands having nourishment ministred, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the ‖ rudiments of the world: why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances?

‖ Or, elements

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not:

22 Which all are to perish with the using) after the commandments and doctrines of men.

23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdome in will-worship and humility, and ‖ neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

‖ Or, punishing, or not sparing.

CHAP. III.

1 He sheweth where we should seek Christ. 5 He exhorteth to mortification, 10 to put off the old man, and to put on Christ, 12 exhorting to charity, humility, and other severall duties.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God.

2 Set your ‖ affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

‖ Or, minde.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ who is our life shall appeare, then shall ye also appeare with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth: fornication, uncleannesse, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousnesse, which is idolatry:

6 For which things sake, the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

7 In the which ye also walked sometime, when ye lived in them.

8 But now you also put off all these, Anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds:

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him.

11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God holy and

878

and beloved) bowels of mercies, kindenesse, humblenesse of minde, meeknesse, long-suffering:

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a ‖ quarrell against any; even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

14 And above all these things, put on charity, which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body: and be ye thankfull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdome, teaching and admonishing one another in psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

18 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is well-pleasing unto the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh: not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but in singlenesse of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men:

24 Knowing, that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doth wrong, shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

‖ *Or*, complaint.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He exhorteth them to be fervent in prayer, 5 to walk wisely toward them that are not yet come to the true knowledge of Christ. 10 He saluteth them, and wisheth them all prosperity.*

Masters, give unto your servants that which is just and equall, knowing that ye also have a Master in heaven.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving.

3 Withall, praying also for us, that God would open unto us a doore of utterance, to speak the mysterie of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5 Walk in wisdome toward them that are without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech be alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithfull minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord:

8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your hearts:

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which are done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters sonne to Barnabas (touching whom ye received commandments; if he come unto you, receive him)

11 And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These onely are my fellow-workers unto the kingdome of God, which have been a comfort unto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, alwayes ‖ labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect and ‖ compleat in all the will of God.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloved physician, and Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, & the church which is in his house.

16 And when this epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans: and that ye likewise reade the epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministery which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

‖ *Or*, striving.

‖ *Or*, filled.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

The first epistle of Paul the apostle, to the *THESSALONIANS.*

CHAP. I.

1 *The Thessalonians are given to understand both how mindefull of them Saint Paul was at all times in thanksgiving and prayer: 5 and also how well he was perswaded of the truth, and sincerity of their faith, and conversion to God.*

Paul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ: grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 We give thanks to God alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembring without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God, and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren ‖ beloved, your election of God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word onely, but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with joy of the holy Ghost:

‖ *Or*, beloved of God, your election.

7 So

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that beleeve in Macedonia and Achaia.
8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not onely in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.
9 For they themselves shew of us, what manner of entring in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God,
10 And to wait for his Sonne from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus which delivered us from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

In what manner the gospel was brought and preached to the Thessalonians, and in what sort also they received it. 18 *A reason is rendred both why Saint Paul was so long absent from them, and also why he was so desirous to see them.*

FOr your selves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain.
2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God with much contention.
3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanesse, nor in guile:
4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.
5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousnesse, God is witnesse.
6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have ‖ been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.
7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:
8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God onely, but also our own souls, because ye were deare unto us.
9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travell: for labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.
10 Ye are witnesses, and God also, how holily, and justly, and unblameably we behaved our selves among you that beleeve.
11 As you know, how we exhorted and comforted, and charged every one of you, (as a father doth his children)
12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdome and glory.
13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that beleeve.
14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countreymen, even as they have of the Jews:
15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have ‖ persecuted us: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:
16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up their sinnes alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.
17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.
18 Wherefore we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once and again: but Satan hindered us.
19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of ‖ rejoycing? are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming?
20 For, ye are our glory and joy.

‖ Or, used authoritie.

‖ Or, chased us out.

‖ Or, glorying.

CHAP. III.

1 S. Paul testifieth his great love to the Thessalonians: partly by sending Timothy unto them to strengthen and comfort them: partly by rejoycing in their well doing: 10 *and partly by praying for them, and desiring a safe coming unto them.*

WHerefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone:
2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellow-labourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:
3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for your selves know that we are appointed thereunto.
4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation, even as it came to passe, and ye know.
5 For this cause when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.
6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us good tidings of your faith and charitie, and that ye have good remembrance of us alwayes, desiring greatly to see us, as we also to see you:
7 Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over you in all our affliction and distresse by your faith:
8 For now we * live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.
9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God,
10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith?
11 Now God himself, and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ ‖ direct our way unto you.
12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one towards another, and towards all men, even as we do towards you:
13 To the end he may stablish your hearts unblameable in holinesse before God even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

* Rom. 7. 9.

‖ Or, guide.

CHAP. IIII.

He exhorteth them to go on forward in all manner of godlinesse, 6 *to live holily and justly,* 9 *to love one another,* 11 *and quietly to follow their own businesse:* 13 *and last of all to sorrow moderately for the dead.* 17 *And unto this last exhortation is annexed a brief description of the resurrection, and second coming of Christ to judgement.*

FUrthermore then we ‖ beseech you, brethren, and ‖ exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have

‖ Or, request.
‖ Or, beseech.

have received of us how ye ought to walk, and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.
2 For ye know what commandments we gave you by the Lord Jesus.
3 For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:
4 That every one of you should know how to possesse his vessel in sanctification and honour:
5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:
6 That no man go beyond and ‖ defraud his brother ‖ in any matter, because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you, and testified.
7 For God hath not called us unto uncleannesse, but unto holinesse.
8 He therefore that ‖ despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit.
9 But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you: for ye your selves are taught of God to love one another.
10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren, which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more:
11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own businesse, and to work with your own hands, (as we commanded you)
12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack ‖ of nothing.
13 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.
14 For if we beleeve that Jesus died, and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him.
15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive, and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are asleep.
16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.
17 Then we which are alive, and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the aire: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.
18 Wherefore ‖ comfort one another with these words.

‖ Or, oppresse, or overreach.
‖ Or, in the matter.
‖ Or, rejecteth.
‖ Or, of no man.
‖ Or, exhort.

CHAP. V.

1 He proceedeth in the former description of Christs coming to judgement, and giveth divers precepts, 23 and so concludeth the epistle.

But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you.
2 For your selves know perfectly, that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.
3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety: then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.
4 But ye, brethren, are not in darknesse, that that day should overtake you as a thief.
5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darknesse.
6 Therefore let us not sleep as do others: but let us watch and be sober.
7 For they that sleep, sleep in the night, and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.
8 But let us who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith, and love, and for an helmet, the hope of salvation.
9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath: but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,
10 Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.
11 Wherefore ‖ comfort your selves together, and edifie one another, even as also ye do.
12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you;
13 And to esteem them very highly in love for their works sake. And be at peace among your selves.
14 Now we ‖ exhort you, brethren, warn them that are ‖ unruly, comfort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.
15 See that none render evil for evil unto any man: but ever follow that which is good, both among your selves, and to all men.
16 Rejoyce evermore.
17 Pray without ceasing.
18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you.
19 Quench not the Spirit.
20 Despise not prophesyings.
21 Prove all things: hold fast that which is good.
22 Abstain from all appearance of evil.
23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you wholly: and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blamelesse unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.
24 Faithfull is he that calleth you, who also will do it.
25 Brethren, pray for us.
26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kisse.
27 I ‖ charge you by the Lord, that this epistle be read unto all the holy brethren.
28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

‖ Or, exhort.
‖ Or, beseech.
‖ Or, disorderly.
‖ Or, adjure.

¶ The first epistle unto the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

Ffrayneed Lowdes Our Book

The

The second epistle of Paul the apostle, to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 S. Paul certifieth them of the good opinion which he had of their faith, love, and patience: 11 and therewithall useth divers reasons for the comforting of them in persecution, whereof the chiefest is taken from the righteous judgement of God.

PAul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ;

2 Grace unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thank God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all towards each other aboundeth.

4 So that we our selves glory in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure.

5 Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdome of God, for which ye also suffer.

6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompense tribulation to them that trouble you:

7 And to you who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven, with † his mighty angels,

8 In flaming fire, ‖ taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power:

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimonie among you was believed) in that day.

11 Wherefore also we pray alwayes for you, that our God would ‖ count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and the work of faith with power.

12 That the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

† *Gr.* the angels of his power.

‖ *Or,* yeelding

‖ *Or,* vouchsafe.

CHAP. II.

1 He willeth them to continue stedfast in the truth received, 3 sheweth that there shall be a departure from the faith, 9 and a discovery of Antichrist, before the day of the Lord come. 15 And thereupon repeateth his former exhortation, and prayeth for them.

NOw we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

2 That ye be not soon shaken in minde, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

3 Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sinne be revealed, the sonne of perdition:

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things?

6 And now ye know what ‖ withholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time.

7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doth already work: onely he who now letteth, will let, until he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightnesse of his coming:

9 Even him whose coming is after the working of Satan, with all power, and signes, and lying wonders,

10 And with all deceivableneſſe of unrighteousnesse, in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleeve a lie:

12 That they all might be damned, who beleeved not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousnesse.

13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle.

16 Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

‖ *Or,* holdeth

CHAP. III.

1 He craveth their prayers for himself, 3 testifieth what confidence he hath in them, 5 maketh request to God in their behalf, 6 giveth them divers precepts, especially to shun idlenesse, and ill company. 6 And last of all, concludeth with prayer and salutation.

FInally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord † may have free course, and be glorified even as it is with you:

2 And that we may be delivered from † unreasonable and wicked men: for all men have not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithfull, who shall stablish you, and keep you from evil.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do and will do the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into ‖ the patient waiting for Christ.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selves from every brother that walketh disorderly,

† *Gr.* may runne.

† *Gr.* absurd.

‖ *Or,* the patience of Christ.

orderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For your selves know how ye ought to follow us, for we behaved not our selves disorderly among you.

8 Neither did we eat any mans bread for nought: but wrought with labour and travell night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we have not power, but to make our selves an ensample unto you to follow us.

10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

11 For we heare that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busie-bodies.

12 Now them that are such we command, and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietnesse they work, and eat their own bread.

13 But ye, brethren, ‖ be not weary in well-doing.

14 And if any man obey not our word ‖ by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always, by all means. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

‖ Or, faint not.

‖ Or, signifie that man by an epistle.

¶ The second epistle to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

The first epistle of Paul the apostle, to TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

1 Timothie is put in minde of the charge which was given unto him by Paul, at his going to Macedonia. 5 Of the right use and end of the law. 11 Of saint Pauls calling to be an apostle, 20 and of Hymeneus and Alexander.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, which is our hope;

2 Unto Timothy, my own sonne in the faith: grace, mercie, and peace from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables, and endlesse genealogies, which minister questions, rather then edifying, which is in faith: so do.

5 Now the end of the commandment is charity, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned:

6 From which some ‖ having swerved, have turned aside unto vain jangling;

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law, understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and prophane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankinde, for men-stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11 According to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me: for that he counted me faithfull, putting me into the ministery,

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and injurious. But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly, in unbelief.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith, and love which is in Christ Jesus.

15 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chiefe.

16 Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter beleeve on him to life everlasting.

17 Now unto the King eternall, immortall, invisible, the onely wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, sonne Timothie, according to the prophesies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest warre a good warfare:

19 Holding faith, and a good conscience, which some having put away, concerning faith have made shipwrack.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

‖ Or, not ayming at.

CHAP. II.

1 That it is meet to pray and give thanks for all men, and the reason why. 9 How women should be attired. 12 They are not permitted to teach. 15 They shall be saved notwithstanding the testimonies of Gods wrath in childebirth, if they continue in faith.

I ‖ Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men:

2 For kings, and for all that are in ‖ authoritie, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godlinesse and honestie.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour:

4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For there is one God, and one mediatour between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.

‖ Or, desire.

‖ Or, eminent place.

6 Who

6 Who gave himself a ransome for all, ‖ to be testified in due time.

‖ *Or*, a testimony.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity.

8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands, without wrath & doubting.

9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparell, with shamefastnesse and sobriety: not with ‖ broidered hair, or gold, or pearles, or costly array;

‖ *Or*, plaited.

11 But (which becometh women professing godlinesse) with good works.

10 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection.

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve.

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childebearing, if they continue in faith and charity, and holinesse with sobriety.

CHAP. III.

How bishops and deacons, and their wives should be qualified, 14 *and to what end S. Paul wrote to Timothie of these things.* 15 *Of the church, and the blessed truth therein taught and professed.*

This is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work.

2 A bishop then must be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, ‖ of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

‖ *Or*, modest.

3 ‖ Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brauler, not covetous;

‖ *Or*, not ready to quarrell and offer wrong, as one in wine.

4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity.

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)

‖ *Or*, one newly come to the faith.

6 Not ‖ a novice, lest being lifted up with pride, he fall into the condemnation of the devil.

7 Moreover, he must have a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into reproch, and the snare of the devil.

8 Likewise must the deacons be grave, not double-tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre,

9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless.

11 Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers; sober, faithfull in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their own houses well.

‖ *Or*, ministred.

13 For they that have ‖ used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldnesse in the faith, which is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly.

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thy self in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ‖ ground of the truth.

‖ *Or*, stay.

16 And without controversie, great is the mysterie of godlinesse: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

CHAP. IIII.

He foretelleth that in the latter times there shall be a departure from the faith. 6 *And to the end that Timothie might not fail in doing his duty, he furnisheth him with divers precepts belonging thereto.*

Now the Spirit speaketh expressly that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils:

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisie, having their conscience seared with a hot iron:

3 Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

4 For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse prophane and old wives fables, and exercise thy self rather unto godlinesse.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth ‖ little, but godlinesse is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

‖ *Or*, for a little time.

9 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all acceptation:

10 For therefore we both labour, and suffer reproch, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charitie, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophesie, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.

15 Meditate upon these things, give thy self wholly to them, that thy profiting may appeare ‖ to all.

‖ *Or*, in all things.

16 Take heed unto thy self, and unto thy doctrine: continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thy self, and them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 *Rules to be observed in reproving.* 3 *Of widows.* 17 *Of elders.* 23 *A precept for Timothies health.* 24 *Some mens sinnes go before unto judgement, and some mens do follow after.*

Rebuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father, and the younger men as brethren:

2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all purity.

3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.

4 But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew ‖ piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God.

‖ *Or*, kindenesse.

5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liveth ‖ in pleasure, is dead while she liveth.

‖ *Or*, delicately.

7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blamelesse.

884

8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own ‖ house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidel.

9 Let not a widow be ‖ taken into the number, under threescore yeares old, having been the wife of one man,

10 Well reported of for good works, if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.

11 But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry:

12 Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.

13 And withall they learn to be idle, wandring about from house to house; and not onely idle, but tatlers also, and busie-bodies, speaking things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary † to speak reproachfully.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

16 If any man or woman that believeth have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be charged; that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

17 Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

18 For the scripture saith, * Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn: and, * The labourer is worthy of his reward.

19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, but ‖ before two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sinne rebuke before all, that others also may fear.

21 I charge thee before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe these things ‖ without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sinnes, keep thy self pure.

23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomachs sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open beforehand, going before to judgement: and some men they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good works of some are manifest beforehand, and they that are otherwise cannot be hid.

CHAP. VI.

1 Of the duty of servants. 3 Not to have fellowship with new-fangled teachers. 6 Godlinesse is great gain: 10 and love of money the root of all evil. 11 What Timothy is to flee, and what to follow, 17 and whereof to admonish the rich. 20 To keep the purity of true doctrine, and to avoid profane janglings.

LEt as many servants as are under the yoke, count their own masters worthy of all honour; that the name of God, and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren: but rather do them service, because they are faithfull and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godlinesse:

4 He is ‖ proud, knowing nothing, but ‖ doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envie, strife, railings, evil surmisings,

5 ‖ Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godlinesse: from such withdraw thy self.

6 But godlinesse with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.

8 And having food and raiment, let us be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtfull lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil, which while some coveted after, they have ‖ erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things: and follow after righteousnesse, godlinesse, faith, love, patience, meekenesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good ‖ confession,

14 That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, untill the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and onely Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords:

16 Who onely hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in † uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy.

18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, ‖ willing to communicate:

19 Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternall life.

20 O Timothie, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane and vain babblings, and oppositions of science, falsly so called:

21 Which some professing, have erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothy was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana.

The

¡ Or, kindred.

‖ Or, chosen.

† Gr. for their railing.

*Deut. 25. 4.

*Matt. 10. 10.

‖ Or, under.

‖ Or, without prejudice.

‖ Or, believing.

‖ Or, a fool.

‖ Or, sick.

‖ Or, gallings one of another.

‖ Or, been seduced.

‖ Or, profession.

† Gr. uncertaintie of riches.

‖ Or, sociable.

The second epistle of Paul the apostle, to TIMOTHIE.

CHAP. I.

Pauls love to Timothie, and the unfeigned faith which was in Timothie himself, his mother, and grandmother. 6 He is exhorted to stirre up the gift of God which was in him, 8 to be stedfast and patient in persecution, 13 and to persist in the form and truth of that doctrine which he had learned of him. 15 Phygellus and Hermogenes, and such like are noted, and Onesiphorus is highly commended.

PAul an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus,

2 To Timothy my dearly beloved sonne: grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, whom I serve from my forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day:

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindfull of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy:

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am perswaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stirre up the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, of love, and of a sound minde.

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according to the power of God:

9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace which was given us in Christ Jesus, before the world began,

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortalitie to light through the gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have ‖ beleeved, and I am perswaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

13 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus.

14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me; of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.

17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him that he may finde mercy of the Lord in that day: and in how many things he ministred unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

CHAP. II.

1 He is exhorted again to constancy and perseverance, and to do the duty of a faithfull servant of the Lord, in dividing the word aright, and staying profane and vain bablings. 17 Of Hymeneus and Philetus. 19 The foundation of the Lord is sure. 22 He is taught whereof to beware, and what to follow after, and in what sort the servant of the Lord ought to behave himself.

THou therefore my sonne, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me ‖ among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore endure hardnesse, as a good souldier of Jesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if a man also strive for masteries, yet is he not crowned except he strive lawfully.

6 ‖ The husbandman that laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.

8 Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David, was raised from the dead, according to my gospel.

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evil doer, even unto bonds; but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I endure all things for the elects sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Jesus, with eternall glory.

11 It is a faithfull saying. For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him:

12 If we suffer, we shall also reigne with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us:

13 If we beleeve not, yet he abideth faithfull, he cannot deny himself.

14 Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord, that they strive not about words, to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers.

15 Study to shew thy self approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

16 But shunne profane and vain bablings, for they will increase unto more ungodlinesse.

17 And their word will eat as doth a ‖ canker: of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus:

18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already: and overthrow the faith of some.

19 Nevertheless, the foundation of God standeth ‖ sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

20 But in a great house there are not onely vessels of gold, and of silver, but also of wood,

‖ *Or*, trusted.

‖ *Or*, by.

‖ *Or*, the husbandman labouring first, must be partaker of the fruits.

‖ *Or*, gangrene.

‖ *Or*, steady.

and of earth: and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified and meet for the masters use, and prepared unto every good work.

22 Flee also youthfull lusts: but follow righteousnesse, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they do gender strifes.

24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive: but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, ‖ patient:

25 In meekenesse instructing those that oppose themselves, if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.

26 And that they may † recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are ‡ taken captive by him at his will.

‖ Or, forbearing.

† Gr. awake.
‡ Gr. taken alive.

CHAP. III.

1 He advertiseth him of the times to come, 6 describeth the enemies of the truth, 10 propoundeth unto him his own example, 16 and commendeth the holy scriptures.

THis know also, that in the last dayes perilous times shall come.

2 For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankfull, unholy,

3 Without naturall affection, truce-breakers, ‖ false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good,

4 Traitours, heady, high-minded, lovers of pleasures more then lovers of God;

5 Having a form of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and leade captive silly women laden with sinnes, led away with divers lusts,

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt mindes, ‖ reprobate concerning the faith.

9 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all men, as theirs also was.

10 But ‖ thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience,

11 Persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me.

12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution.

13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them:

15 And that from a childe thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction for instruction in righteousnesse:

17 That the man of God may be perfect, ‖ throughly furnished unto all good works.

‖ Or, makebates.

‖ Or, of no judgement.

‖ Or, thou hast been a diligent follower of.

‖ Or, perfected.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth him to do his duty with all care and diligence: 6 certifieth him of the nearnesse of his death: 9 willeth him to come speedily unto him, and to bring Marcus with him, and certain other things which he wrote for: 14 warneth him to beware of Alexander the smith: 16 informeth him what had befallen him at his first answering: 19 And soon after he concludeth.

I Charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdome:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching eares.

4 And they shall turn away their eares from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangelist, ‖ make full proof of thy ministery.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousnesse, which the Lord the righteous judge shall give me at that day: and not to me onely, but unto all them also that love his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me.

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Onely Luke is with me. Take Mark and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministery.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring with thee, and the books, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil, the Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom be thou ware also, for he hath greatly withstood ‖ our words.

16 At my first answer no man stood with me: but all men forsook me: I pray God that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding, the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might heare: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdome; to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

21 Do thy diligence to come before winter: Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

‖ Or, faith.

‖ Or, our preachings.

¶ The second epistle unto Timotheus, ordained the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians, was written from Rome, when Paul was brought before Nero the second time.

The epistle of Paul to *TITUS*.

CHAP. I.

1 For what end Titus was left in Crete. 6 How they that are to be chosen ministers, ought to be qualified. 11 The mouthes of evil teachers to be stopped: 12 and what manner of men they be.

PAul a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the truth, which is after godlinesse:

2 ‖ In hope of eternall life, which God that cannot lie, promised before the world began;

3 But hath in due times manifested his word through preaching, which is committed unto me, according to the commandment of God our Saviour:

4 To Titus mine own sonne after the common faith, grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are ‖ wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee.

6 If any be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, having faithfull children not accused of riot or unruly.

7 For a bishop must be blamelesse, as the steward of God: not self-willed, not soon angry, not *given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre;

8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of ‖ good men, sober, just, holy, temperate,

9 Holding fast the faithfull word, ‖ as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

10 For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision:

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucres sake.

12 One of themselves, even a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians are alway liars, evil beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith;

14 Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.

15 Unto the pure all things are pure, but unto them that are defiled, and unbeleeving, is nothing pure: but even their minde and conscience is defiled.

16 They professe that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work ‖ reprobate.

CHAP. II.

1 Directions given to Titus both for his doctrine and life. 9 Of the duty of servants, and in generall of all Christians.

BUt speak thou the things which become sound doctrine:

2 That the aged men be ‖ sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

3 The aged women likewise that they be in behaviour as becometh ‖ holinesse, not ‖ false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things;

4 That they may teach the young women to be ‖ sober, to love their husbands, to love their children,

5 To be discreet, chast, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be ‖ sober-minded.

7 In all things shewing thy self a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing uncorruptnesse, gravity, sincerity,

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned, that he that is of the contrary part, may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

9 Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things, not ‖ answering again:

10 Not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity, that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

11 For the grace of God ‖ that bringeth salvation, hath appeared to all men,

12 Teaching us, that denying ungodlinesse and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world:

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ,

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

1 Titus is yet further directed by Paul, both concerning the things he should teach, and not teach. 10 He is willed also to reject obstinate hereticks: 12 which done, he appointeth him both time and place, wherein he should come unto him, and so concludeth.

PUt them in minde to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work,

2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meeknesse unto all men.

3 For we our selves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hatefull, and hating one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and ‖ love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteousnesse, which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost:

6 Which he shed on us † abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour.

7 That being justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternall life.

‖ *Or*, for.

‖ *Or*, left undone.

* 1. Tim. 3. 3

‖ *Or*, good things.

‖ *Or*, in teaching.

‖ *Or*, void of judgement.

‖ *Or*, vigilant.

‖ *Or*, holy women.

‖ *Or*, make-bates.

‖ *Or*, wise.

‖ *Or*, discreet.

‖ *Or*, gainsaying.

‖ *Or*, that bringeth salvation to all men, hath appeared.

‖ *Or*, pitie.

† *Gr.* richly.

8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have believed in God, might be carefull to maintain good works: these things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the law, for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 A man that is an heretick, after the first and second admonition, reject:

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis: for I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

14 And let ours also learn to ‖ maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitfull.

‖ Or, professe honest trades.

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus ordained the first bishop of the church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

The epistle of Paul to PHILEMON.

4 He rejoyceth to heare of the faith and love of Philemon: 9 whom he desireth to forgive his servant Onesimus, and lovingly to receive him again.

PAUL a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother unto Philemon our deerely beloved, and fellow-labourer,

2 And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-souldier, and to the church in thy house:

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God, making mention of thee alwayes in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints;

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectuall by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Jesus.

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ, to enjoyn thee that which is convenient,

9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my sonne Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds.

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable: but now profitable to thee and to me.

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him that is mine own bowels.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministred unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I do nothing: that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessitie, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever.

16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, especially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my self.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine accoume.

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more then I say.

22 But withall prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus,

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-labourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a servant.

The

The epistle of Paul the apostle, to the *HEBREWS.*

CHAP. I.

1 Christ in these last times coming to us from the Father, 4 is preferred above the angels, both in person and office.

GOd who at sundry times, and in divers manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

2 Hath in these last dayes spoken unto us by his Sonne, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

* Wisd.7.26 3 * Who being the brightnesse of his glorie, and the expresse image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sinnes, sat down on the right hand of the majestie on high:

4 Being made so much better then the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name then they.

5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my Sonne, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Sonne?

6 And again, when he bringeth in the first-begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

7 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

† Gr. rightnesse, or straightnes. 8 But unto the Sonne he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, a sceptre of † righteousnesse is the sceptre of thy kingdome:

9 Thou hast loved righteousnesse, and hated iniquitie, therefore God even thy God hath anointed thee with the oyl of gladnesse above thy fellows.

* Psal.102. 25, &c. 10 And, * Thou Lord in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the works of thine hands.

* Isa.34.4. 11 * They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed; but thou art the same, and thy yeares shall not fail.

*Psal. 110.1. Matt. 22 44. 13 But to which of the angels said he at any time, * Sit on my right hand, untill I make thine enemies thy footstool?

14 Are they not all ministring spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

CHAP. II.

1 We ought to be obedient to Christ Jesus, 5 and that because he vouchsafed to take our nature upon him, 14 as it was necessary.

THerefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should † let them slip.

† Gr. run out as leaking vessels. 2 For if the word spoken by angels was stedfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompense of reward:

3 How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him,

4 God also bearing them witnesse, both with signes and wonders, and with divers miracles, and || Or, distributions. gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his own will?

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak.

* Psal.8.4. 6 But one in a certain place testified, saying, * What is man that thou art mindfull of him: or the sonne of man that thou visitest him?

|| Or, a little while inferiour to. 7 Thou madest him || a little lower then the angels, thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands:

8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing that is not put under him. But now we see not yet all things put under him.

|| Or, by. 9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower then the angels, || for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour, that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sonnes unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee.

* Psal.18.2. * Isa.8.18. 13 And again, * I will put my trust in him: and again, * Behold, I, and the children which God hath given me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and bloud, he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil:

15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their life time subject to bondage.

† Gr. he taketh not hold of angels, but of the seed of Abraham he taketh hold. 16 For verily † he took not on him the nature of angels: but he took on him the seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a mercifull and faithfull high priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people:

18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 Christ is more worthy then Moses: 7 therefore if we beleeve not in him, we shall be more worthy of punishment then hard-hearted Israel.

WHerefore holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and high priest of our profession Christ Jesus,

† Gr. made. 1.Sam.12.6 2 Who was faithfull to him that † appointed him, as also Moses was faithfull in all his house.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glory then Moses, in as much as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For every house is builded by some man, but he that built all things is God.

5 And Moses verily was faithfull in all his house as a servant, for a testimonie of those things which were to be spoken after:

6 But Christ as a Sonne over his own house, whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoycing of the hope firm unto the end.

7 Where-

890

*Psal 95. 7. 7 Wherefore as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if ye will heare his voice,
8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wildernesse:
9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works fourty yeares.
10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway erre in their hearts, and they have not known my wayes.
11 So I sware in my wrath, † They shall not enter into my rest.

† Gr If they shall enter.

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.
13 But exhort one another daily while it is called, To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnesse of sinne.
14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end.
15 While it is said, To day if ye will heare his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.
16 For some when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.
17 But with whom was he grieved fourty yeares? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wildernesse?
18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that beleeved not?
19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of unbelief.

CHAP. IIII.

1 The rest of Christians is attained by faith. 12 The power of Gods word. 14 By our high priest Jesus the Sonne of God, subject to infirmities, but not sinne, 16 we must and may go boldly to the throne of grace.

LEt us therefore fear, lest a promise being left us of entring into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

† Gr The word of hearing. ‖ Or, because they were not united by faith to.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but † the word preached did not profit them, ‖ not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.
3 For we which have beleeved do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, If they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.
4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.
5 And in this place again, If they shall enter into my rest.
6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom ‖ it was first preached, entred not in because of unbelief:

‖ Or, the gospel was first preached.

7 Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, To day if ye will heare his voice, harden not your hearts.
8 For if ‖ Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day.

‖ That is, Josuah.

9 There remaineth therefore a ‖ rest to the people of God.

‖ Or, keeping of a sabbath

10 For he that is entred into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.
11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of ‖ unbelief.

‖ Or, disobedience.

12 For the word of God is quick, and powerfull, and sharper then any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joynts and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.
13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked, and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.
14 Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Sonne of God, let us hold fast our profession.
15 For we have not an high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sinne.
16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and finde grace to help in time of need.

CHAP. V.

1 The authority & honour of our Saviours priesthood 11 Negligence in the knowledge thereof is reproved

FOr every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes:
2 Who ‖ can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity.

‖ Or, can reasonably bear with.

3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to offer for sinnes.
4 And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.
5 So also, Christ glorified not himself, to be made an high priest: but he that said unto him, Thou art my Sonne, to day have I begotten thee.
6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.
7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and teares, unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard, ‖ in that he feared:

‖ Or, for his pietie.

8 Though he were a Sonne, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:
9 And being made perfect, he became the authour of eternall salvation unto all them that obey him,
10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec.
11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.
12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God, and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

† Gr. hath no experience. ‖ Or, perfect, ‖ Or, of an habit, or perfection.

13 For every one that useth milk, † is unskilfull in the word of righteousnesse: for he is a babe.
14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are ‖ of full age, even those who by reason ‖ of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

CHAP. VI.

1 He exhorteth, not to fall back from the faith, 11 but to be stedfast, 12 diligent and patient to wait upon God, 13 because God is most sure in his promise.

THerefore leaving ‖ the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection, not

‖ Or, the word of the beginning of Christ.

not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God,
2 Of the doctrine of baptismes, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall judgement.
3 And this will we do, if God permit.
4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,
5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come;
6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselves the Sonne of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.
7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them ‖ by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God.
8 But that which beareth thorns and briers, is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing, whose end is to be burned.
9 But beloved, we are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.
10 For God is not unrighteous, to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministred to the saints, and do minister.
11 And we desire, that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end.
12 That ye be not slothfull, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.
13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he sware by himself,
14 Saying, Surely, blessing, I will blesse thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.
15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.
16 For men verily swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.
17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, † confirmed it by an oath:
18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us.
19 Which hope we have as an anker of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entreth into that within the vail,
20 Whither the forerunner is for us entred, even Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

‖ *Or*, for.

† *Gr.* interposed himself by an oath.

CHAP. VII.

1 Christ Jesus is a priest after the order of Melchisedec, 11 and so farre more excellent then the priests of Aarons order.

FOr this Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him:
2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousnesse, and after that also, king of Salem, which is, king of peace:
3 Without father, without mother, † without descent, having neither beginning of dayes, nor end of life: but made like unto the Sonne of God, abideth a priest continually.

† *Gr.* without pedegree.

4 Now consider how great this man was, unto whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.
5 And verily they that are of the sonnes of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loyns of Abraham.
6 But he whose ‖ descent is not counted from them, received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.
7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is blessed of the better.
8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he receiveth them, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.
9 And as I may so say, Levi also who receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.
10 For he was yet in the loyns of his father when Melchisedec met him.
11 If therefore perfection were by the Leviticall priesthood, (for under it the people received the law) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?
12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessitie a change also of the law.
13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.
14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.
15 And it is yet farre more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest,
16 Who is made, not after the law of a carnall commandment, but after the power of an endlesse life.
17 For he testifieth, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.
18 For there is verily a disanulling of the commandment going before, for the weaknesse and unprofitablenesse thereof.
19 For the law made nothing perfect, ‖ but the bringing in of a better hope did: by the which we draw nigh unto God.
20 And in as much as not without an oath he was made priest,
21 (For those priests were made ‖ without an oath: but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, * The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou art a priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec)
22 By so much was Jesus made a suretie of a better testament.
23 And they truely were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death.
24 But this man, because he continueth ever, hath an ‖ unchangeable priesthood.
25 Wherefore he is able also to save them ‖ to the uttermost, that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.
26 For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmlesse, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heavens.
27 Who needeth not dayly as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sinnes, and then for the peoples: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.
28 For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmitie; but the word of the oath which was since the law, maketh the Sonne, who is † consecrated for evermore.

‖ *Or*, pedegree.

‖ *Or*, but it was the bringing in.

‖ *Or*, without swearing of an oath.

* Psal. 110. 4.

‖ *Or*, which passeth not from one to another.

‖ *Or*, evermore.

† *Gr.* perfected.

CHAP.

892

CHAP. VIII.

1 Be the eternall priesthood of Christ, the Leviticall priesthood of Aaron is abolished: 7 and the temporall covenant with the fathers, by the eternall covenant of the gospel.

NOw of the things which we have spoken, this is the summe: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the majestie in the heavens:

2 A minister ‖ of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle which the Lord pitched, and not man.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessitie that this man have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that ‖ there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle. For see (saith he) that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministery, by how much also he is the mediatour of a better ‖ covenant, which was established upon better promises.

7 For if that first covenant had been faultlesse, then should no place have been sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the dayes come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and the house of Judah:

9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

10 For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those dayes, saith the Lord, * I will † put my lawes into their minde, and write them ‖ in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be mercifull to their unrighteousnesse, and their sinnes and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

‖ *Or*, of holy things.

‖ *Or*, they are priests.

‖ *Or*, testament.

* Jer. 31. 33.
† Gr. give.
‖ *Or*, upon.

CHAP. IX.

1 The description of the rites and bloudy sacrifices of the law, 11 farre inferiour to the dignitie and perfection of the bloud and sacrifice of Christ.

THen verily the first covenant had also ‖ ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary.

2 For there was a tabernacle made, the first wherein was the candlestick and the table and the shewbread; which is called ‖ the sanctuary.

3 And after the second vaile, the tabernacle which is called the holiest of all:

4 Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aarons rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant;

5 And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy-seat: of which we cannot now speak particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went alwayes into the first tabernacle accomplishing the service of God.

7 But into the second went the high priest alone once every yeare, not without bloud, which he offered for himself, and for the errours of the people.

8 The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing:

9 Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience,

10 Which stood onely in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnall ‖ ordinances imposed on them untill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building:

12 Neither by the bloud of goats and calves: but by his own bloud he entred in once into the holy place, having obtained eternall redemption for us.

13 For if the bloud of bulls, and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh:

14 How much more shall the bloud of Christ, who through the eternall Spirit, offered himself without ‖ spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?

15 And for this cause he is the Mediatour of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternall inheritance.

16 For where a testament is, there must also of necessitie ‖ be the death of the testatour.

17 For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all whilest the testatour liveth.

18 Whereupon, neither the first testament was ‖ dedicated without bloud.

19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people, according to the law, he took the bloud of calves and of goats, with water and ‖ scarlet wooll, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the people,

20 Saying, This is the bloud of the testament which God hath enjoyned unto you.

21 Moreover, he sprinkled with bloud both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministery.

22 And almost all things are by the law purged with bloud: and without shedding of bloud is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into heaven it self, now to appeare in the presence of God for us.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entreth into the holy place, every yeare with bloud of others:

26 For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sinne by the sacrifice of himself.

‖ *Or*, ceremonies.

‖ *Or*, holy.

‖ *Or*, rites, or ceremonies.

‖ *Or*, fault.

‖ *Or*, be brought in.

‖ *Or*, purified.

‖ *Or*, purple.

27 And

27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgement;
28 So Chriſt was once offered to bear the ſinnes of many, and unto them that look for him ſhall he appeare the ſecond time, without ſinne, unto ſalvation.

CHAP. X.

1 The weakneſſe of the law-ſacrifices. 10 The ſacrifice of Chriſts body once offered, 14 for ever hath taken away ſinnes. 19 An exhortation to hold faſt the faith, with patience and thanksgiving.

FOr the law having a ſhadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with thoſe ſacrifices, which they offered yeare by yeare continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.
2 For then would they not have ceaſed to be offered: becauſe that the worſhippers once purged, ſhould have had no more conſcience of ſinnes.
3 But in thoſe ſacrifices there is a remembrance again made of ſinnes every yeare.
4 For it is not poſſible that the bloud of bulls and of goats, ſhould take away ſinnes.
5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he ſaith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldeſt not, but a body ‖ haſt thou prepared me:
6 In burnt-offerings, and ſacrifices for ſinne thou haſt had no pleaſure:
7 Then ſaid I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will O God.
8 Above, when he ſaid, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt-offerings, and offering for ſinne thou wouldeſt not, neither haſt pleaſure therein, which are offered by the law:
9 Then ſaid he, Lo, I come to do thy will: (O God) he taketh away the firſt, that he may eſtabliſh the ſecond.
10 By the which will we are ſanctified, through the offering of the body of Jeſus Chriſt once for all.
11 And every prieſt ſtandeth daily miniſtring and offering oftentimes the ſame ſacrifices which can never take away ſinnes.
12 But this man, after he had offered one ſacrifice for ſinnes for ever, ſat down on the right hand of God:
13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footſtool.
14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are ſanctified.
15 Whereof the holy Ghoſt alſo is a witneſſe to us: for after that he had ſaid before,
16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after thoſe dayes, ſaith the Lord: I will *put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them:
17 And their ſinnes and iniquities will I remember no more.
18 Now, where remiſſion of theſe is, there is no more offering for ſinne.
19 Having therefore, brethren, ‖ boldneſſe to enter into the holieſt by the bloud of Jeſus,
20 By a new and living way which he hath ‖conſecrated for us, through the vail, that is to ſay, his fleſh:
21 And having an high prieſt over the houſe of God:
22 Let us draw neare with a true heart, in full aſſurance of faith, having our hearts ſprinkled from an evil conſcience, and our bodies waſhed with pure water.
23 Let us hold faſt the profeſſion of our faith without wavering: (for he is faithfull that promiſed)
24 And let us conſider one another to provoke unto love, and to good works.
25 Not forſaking the aſſembling of our ſelves together, as the manner of ſome is, but exhorting one another: and ſo much the more, as ye ſee the day approching.
26 For if we ſinne wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more ſacrifice for ſinnes,
27 But a certain fearfull looking for of judgement, and fiery indignation, which ſhall devoure the adverſaries.
28 He that deſpiſed Moſes law, died without mercy, under two or three witneſſes.
29 Of how much ſorer punishment, ſuppoſe ye, ſhall he be thought worthy, who hath troden under foot the Sonne of God, and hath counted the bloud of the covenant wherewith he was ſanctified an unholy thing, and hath done deſpite unto the Spirit of grace?
30 For we know him that hath ſaid, *Vengeance belongeth unto me, I will recompenſe, ſaith the Lord: and again, The Lord ſhall judge his people.
31 It is a fearfull thing to fall into the hands of the living God.
32 But call to remembrance the former dayes, in which after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions:
33 Partly whileſt ye were made a gazing ſtock, both by reproches and afflictions, and partly whileſt ye became companions of them that were ſo uſed.
34 For ye had compaſſion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the ſpoiling of your goods, knowing in your ſelves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring ſubſtance.
35 Caſt not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompenſe of reward.
36 For ye have need of patience, that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promiſe.
37 For yet a little while, and he that ſhall come will come, and will not tarry.
38 Now the juſt ſhall live by faith: but if any man draw back, my ſoul ſhall have no pleaſure in him.
39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition: but of them that beleeve, to the ſaving of the ſoul.

CHAP. XI.

1 What faith is. 6 Without faith we cannot pleaſe God. 7 The worthy fruits thereof in the fathers of old time.

NOw faith is the ‖ ſubſtance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not ſeen.
2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.
3 Through faith we underſtand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, ſo that things which are ſeen were not made of things which do appeare.
4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent ſacrifice then Kain, by which he obtained witneſſe, that he was righteous, God teſtifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead, ‖ yet ſpeaketh.
5 By faith Enoch was tranſlated that he ſhould not ſee death, and was not found, becauſe God had tranſlated him: for before his tranſlation he had this teſtimony, that he pleaſed God.
6 But without faith it is impoſſible to pleaſe him: for he that cometh to God, muſt beleeve that

‖ Or, thou haſt fitted me.

* Jer. 31. 33.

‖ Or, liberty.

‖ Or, new made.

‖ Or, ground or, confidence.

‖ Or, is yet ſpoken of.

* Deut. 32. 35. Rom. 12. 19.

894

that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

‖Or, being warie.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seen as yet, ‖ moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousnesse which is by faith.

8 By faith Abraham when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara her self received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a childe when she was past age, because she judged him faithfull who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the starres of the skie in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea-shore innumerable.

†Gr. according to faith.

13 These all died † in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afarre off, and were perswaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country.

15 And truely if they had been mindfull of that country, from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned:

16 But now they desire a better country, that is an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.

17 By faith Abraham when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises, offered up his onely begotten sonne.

‖Or, to.

18 ‖ Of whom it was said, that in Isaac shall thy seed be called.

19 Accounting, that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead: from whence also he received him in a figure.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob when he was a dying, blessed both the sonnes of Joseph, and worshipped leaning upon the top of his staff.

‖Or, remembred.

22 By faith Joseph when he died, ‖ made mention of the departing of the children of Israel: and gave commandment concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moses when he was born, was hid three moneths of his parents, because they saw he was a proper childe, and they not afraid of the kings commandment.

24 By faith Moses when he was come to yeares, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaohs daughter:

25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enjoy the pleasures of sinne for a season:

‖Or, for Christ.

26 Esteeming the reproch ‖ of Christ greater riches then the treasures in Egypt: for he had respect unto the recompense of the reward.

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king, for he endured as seeing him who is invisible.

28 Through faith he kept the passeover, and the sprinkling of bloud, lest he that destroyed the first-born, should touch them.

29 By faith they passed through the Red sea, as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do, were drowned.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven dayes.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them ‖ that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace.

‖Or, that were disobedient.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae, of David also and Samuel, and of the prophets.

33 Who through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnesse, obtained promises, stopped the mouthes of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weaknesse were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were * tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection.

*2. Mac 7.7.

36 And others had triall of cruell mockings, and scourgings, yea moreover, of bonds and imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandred about in sheep-skins, and goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthy: they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise:

40 God having ‖ provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect.

‖Or, foreseen.

CHAP. XII.

1 An exhortation to constant faith, patience, and godlinesse. 22 A commendation of the new testament above the old.

WHerefore, seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sinne which doth so easily beset us, and let us runne with patience the race that is set before us,

2 Looking unto Jesus the ‖ authour and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before him, endured the crosse, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

‖Or, beginner

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied, and faint in your mindes.

4 Ye have not yet resisted unto bloud, striving against sinne.

5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My sonne, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every sonne whom he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sonnes: for what sonne is he whom the father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sonnes.

9 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?

10 For

10 For they verily for a few dayes chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holinesse.
11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterward it yeeldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousnesse, unto them which are exercised thereby.
12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees.
13 And make ‖ straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.
14 Follow peace with all men, and holinesse, without which no man shall see the Lord:
15 Looking diligently, lest any man ‖ fail of the grace of God, lest any root of bitternes springing up, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled:
16 Lest there be any fornicatour, or prophane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birth-right.
17 For ye know how that afterward when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no ‖ place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with teares.
18 For ye are not come unto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackenesse, and darkenesse, and tempest,
19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words, which voice they that heard, intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more:
20 (For they could not endure that which was commanded: and if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart.
21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake)
22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the citie of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels,
23 To the generall assembly and church of the first-born, which are ‖ written in heaven, and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men, made perfect,
24 And to Jesus the mediatour of the new covenant, and to the bloud of sprinkling, that speaketh better things then that of Abel.
25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven.
26 Whose voice then shook the earth, but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth onely, but also heaven.
27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that ‖ are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken may remain.
28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdome which cannot be moved, ‖ let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear.
29 For our God is a consuming fire.

‖ *Or*, even.
‖ *Or*, fall from.
‖ *Or*, way to change his minde.
‖ *Or*, enrolled.
‖ *Or*, testament.
‖ *Or*, may be shaken.
‖ *Or*, let us hold fast.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Divers admonitions, as to charitie, 4 to honest life, 5 to avoid covetousnesse, 7 to regard Gods preachers, 9 to take heed of strange doctrines, 10 to confesse Christ, 16 to give almes, 17 to obey governours, 18 to pray for the apostle. 20 The conclusion.*

LEt brotherly love continue.
2 Be not forgetfull to entertain strangers, for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.
3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; and them which suffer adversitie, as being your selves also in the body.
4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.
5 Let your conversation be without covetousnesse: and be content with such things as ye have. For he hath said, * I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.
6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.
7 Remember them which ‖ have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God: whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation.
8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.
9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.
10 We have an altar whereof they have no right to eat, which serve the tabernacle.
11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose bloud is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sinne, are burnt without the camp.
12 Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctifie the people with his own bloud, suffered without the gate.
13 Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproch.
14 * For here have we no continuing citie, but we seek one to come.
15 By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, † giving thanks to his name.
16 But to do good, and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.
17 Obey them that ‖ have the rule over you, and submit your selves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account: that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unprofitable for you.
18 Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly.
19 But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.
20 Now the God of peace that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the bloud of the everlasting ‖ covenant,
21 Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, ‖ working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.
22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation, for I have written a letter unto you in few words.
23 Know ye, that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.
24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints. They of Italie salute you.
25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

* Josh. 1. 5.
‖ *Or*, are the guides.
* Mic. 2. 10.
† *Gr.* confessing to.
‖ *Or*, guide.
‖ *Or*, testament.
‖ *Or*, doing.

¶ Written to the Hebrews from Italy, by Timothy.

The

The generall epistle of JAMES.

CHAP. I.

We are to rejoice under the crosse, 5 to ask patience of God, 13 and in our trials not to impute our weaknesses or sinnes unto him, 19 but rather to hearken to the word, to meditate in it, and to do thereafter, 26 otherwise man may seem, but never be truly religious.

JAmes a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations,

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lack wisdome, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not, and it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering: for he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea, driven with the winde, and tossed.

7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double-minded man is unstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of low degree ‖ rejoyce in that he is exalted:

10 But the rich, in that he is made low: because as the flower of the grasse he shall passe away.

11 For the sunne is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withereth the grasse; and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his wayes.

12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with ‖ evil, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed.

15 Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sinne: and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Do not erre, my beloved brethren.

17 Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his own will begat he us with the word of truth, that we should be a kinde of first-fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to heare, slow to speak, slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousnesse of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluity of naughtinesse, and receive with meekenesse the engrafted word, which is able to save your soules.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his naturall face in a glasse.

24 For he beholdeth himself and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of libertie, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, this man shall be blessed in his ‖ deed.

26 If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this mans religion is vain.

27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, To visit the fatherlesse and widowes in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

‖ Or, glory.

‖ Or, evils.

‖ Or, doing.

CHAP. II.

It is not agreeable to Christian profession to regard the rich, and to despise the poore brethren: 13 rather we are to be loving and mercifull; and not to boast of faith where no deeds are, 17 which is but a dead faith, 19 the faith of devils, 21 not of Abraham, 25 and Rahab.

MY brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.

2 For if there come unto your † assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparell, and there come in also a poore man, in vile raiment:

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here ‖ in a good place; and say to the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool:

4 Are you not then partiall in your selves, and are become judges of evill thoughts?

5 Hearken my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poore of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of ‖ the kingdome, which he hath promised to them that love him?

6 But ye have despised the poore. Do not rich men oppresse you, and draw you before the judgement-seats?

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy name, by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfill the royall law, according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self, ye do well.

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sinne, and are convinced of the law as transgressours.

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

11 For ‖ he that said, Do not commit adultery; said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressour of the law.

12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

13 For he shall have judgement without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy ‖ rejoyceth against judgement.

14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

† Gr. synagogue.

‖ Or, well, or seemly.

‖ Or, that.

‖ Or, that law which said.

‖ Or, glorieth

15 If

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,
16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be you warmed, and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needfull to the body: what doth it profit?
17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead being † alone.
18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith ‖ without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.
19 Thou beleevest that there is one God, thou doest well: the devils also beleeve, and tremble.
20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?
21 Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his sonne upon the altar?
22 ‖ Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?
23 And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, * Abraham beleeved God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousnesse: and he was called the friend of God.
24 Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith onely.
25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?
26 For as the body without the ‖ spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

† *Gr.* by it self.
‖ *Some copies reade,* by thy works.
‖ *Or,* thou seest.
* Gen. 15. 6. Rom. 4. 3. Gal. 3. 6.
‖ *Or,* breath.

CHAP. III.

1 We are not rashly or arrogantly to reprove others: 5 but rather to bridle the tongue, a little member, but a powerfull instrument of much good, and great harm. 13 They who be truely wise, be milde and peaceable, without envying and strife.

My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater ‖ condemnation.
2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.
3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouthes, that they may obey us, and we turn about their whole body.
4 Behold also the ships, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whithersoever the governour listeth.
5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things: behold how great ‖ a matter a little fire kindleth.
6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.
7 For every † kinde of beasts and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of † mankinde:
8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poyson.
9 Therewith blesse we God, even the Father: and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.
10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.
11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same ‖ place sweet water and bitter?

‖ *Or,* judgement.
‖ *Or,* wood.
† *Gr.* nature.
† *Gr.* nature of man.
‖ *Or,* hole.

12 Can the fig-tree, my brethren, bear olive-berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yeeld salt water and fresh.
13 Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meeknesse of wisdome.
14 But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.
15 This wisdome descendeth not from above, but is earthly, ‖ sensuall, devilish.
16 For where envying and strife is, there is † confusion, and every evil work.
17 But the wisdome that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easie to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, ‖ without partialitie, and without hypocrisie.
18 And the fruit of righteousnesse is sown in peace of them that make peace.

‖ *Or,* naturall.
† *Gr.* tumult, *or* unquietnesse.
‖ *Or,* without wrangling.

CHAP. IIII.

1 We are to strive against covetousnesse, 4 intemperance, 5 pride, 11 detraction and rash judgement of others: 13 and not to be confident in the good successe of worldly businesse, but mindfull ever of the uncertainty of this life, to commit our selves and all our affairs to Gods providence.

From whence come warres and ‖ fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your ‖ lusts, that warre in your members?
2 Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and warre, yet ye have not, because ye ask not.
3 Ye ask, and receive not, because ye ask amisse, that ye may consume it upon your ‖ lusts.
4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.
5 Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth ‖ to envie?
6 But he giveth more grace, wherefore he saith, * God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.
7 Submit your selves therefore to God: resist the devil, and he will flee from you.
8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purifie your hearts ye double-minded.
9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter be turned to mourning, and your joy to heavinesse.
10 Humble your selves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.
11 Speak not evil one of another (brethren) he that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.
12 There is one law-giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?
13 * Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a citie, and continue there a yeare, and buy and sell, and get gain:
14 Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow: for what is your life? ‖ It is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.
15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will we shall live, and do this, or that.
16 But now ye rejoyce in your boastings: all such rejoycing is evil.

‖ *Or,* brawlings.
‖ *Or,* pleasures.
‖ *Or,* pleasures.
‖ *Or,* enviously.
* Prov. 3. 34. 1. Pet. 5. 5.
* Prov. 27. 1.
‖ *Or,* for it is.

838

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doth it not, to him it is sinne.

CHAP. V.

1 Wicked rich men are to feare Gods vengeance. 7 We ought to be patient in afflictions, after the example of the prophets, and Job: 12 to forbear swearing: 13 to pray in adversity, to sing in prosperitie: 16 to acknowledge mutually our severall faults, to pray one for another, 19 and to reduce a straying brother to the truth.

GO to now ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments moth-eaten.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witnesse against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye have heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Behold the hire of the labourers, which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of sabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton: ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye have condemned and killed the just, and he doth not resist you.

7 ‖ Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, untill he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 ‖ Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitifull and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my brethren, sweare not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay, lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him sing psalmes.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oyl in the name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sinnes, they shall be forgiven him.

16 Confesse your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: the effectuall fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed ‖ earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three yeares and six moneths.

18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, if any of you do erre from the truth, and one convert him;

20 Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

‖ Or, be long patient, or suffer with long patience.

‖ Or, grudge or grieve not.

‖ Or, in his prayer.

The first epistle generall of PETER.

CHAP. I.

1 He blesseth God for his manifold spirituall graces, 10 shewing that the salvation in Christ is no news, but a thing prophesied of old: 13 and exhorteth them accordingly to a godly conversation, forasmuch as they are now born anew by the word of God.

PEter an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the bloud of Jesus Christ: Grace unto you and peace be multiplied.

3 Blessed be the God, and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his † abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven ‖ for you,

5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time.

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoyce, though now for a season (if need be) ye are in heavinesse through manifold temptations.

7 That the triall of your faith being much more precious then of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise, and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.

8 Whom having not seen, ye love: in whom though now ye see him not, yet beleeving, ye rejoyce with joy unspeakable, and full of glory:

9 Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your soules.

10 Of which salvation the prophets have enquired, and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you.

11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signifie, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the holy

† Gr. much.

‖ Or, for us.

holy Ghoſt ſent down from heaven, which things the angels deſire to look into.

13 Wherefore gird up the loyns of your minde, be ſober, and hope † to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jeſus Chriſt.

† Gr. perfectly.

14 As obedient children, not faſhioning your ſelves according to the former luſts, in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, ſo be ye holy in all manner of converſation;

* Lev. 11. 44. and 19. 2. and 20. 7.

16 Becauſe it is written, * Be ye holy, for I am holy.

17 And if ye call on the Father, who without reſpect of perſons judgeth according to every mans work, paſſe the time of your ſojourning here in fear:

18 Foraſmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as ſilver and gold, from your vain converſation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious bloud of Chriſt, as of a Lambe without blemiſh and without ſpot.

20 Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifeſt in theſe laſt times for you;

21 Who by him do beleeve in God that raiſed him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye have purified your ſouls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the brethren: ſee that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently,

23 Being born again, not of corruptible ſeed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.

|| Or, for that.

24 † For all fleſh is as graſſe, and all the glory of man, as the flower of graſſe: the graſſe withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the goſpel is preached unto you.

CHAP. II.

He dehorteth them from the breach of charitie: 4 ſhewing that Chriſt is the foundation whereupon they are built. 11 He beſeecheth them alſo to abſtain from fleſhly luſts, 13 to be obedient to magiſtrates: 18 and teacheth ſervants how to obey their maſters, 20 patiently ſuffering for well doing, after the example of Chriſt.

WHerefore laying aſide all malice and all guile, and hypocriſies, and envies, and all evil ſpeakings,

2 As new born babes deſire the ſincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

3 If ſo be ye have taſted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming, as unto a living ſtone, diſallowed indeed of men, but choſen of God, and precious,

5 Ye alſo as lively ſtones, || are built up a ſpirituall houſe, an holy prieſthood to offer up ſpirituall ſacrifices acceptable to God by Jeſus Chriſt.

|| Or, be ye built.

6 Wherefore it is contained in the ſcripture, * Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner-ſtone, elect, precious; and he that beleeveth on him ſhall not be confounded.

* Pſal. 118. 22. Iſa. 28. 16. Matt. 21. 42. Acts 4. 11.

7 Unto you therefore which beleeve he is || precious; but unto them which be diſobedient, the ſtone which the builders diſallowed, the ſame is made the head of the corner,

|| Or, he is an honour.

8 * And a ſtone of ſtumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which ſtumble at the word, being diſobedient, whereunto alſo they were appointed.

* Iſa. 8. 14.

9 But ye are a choſen generation, a royall prieſthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye ſhould ſhew forth the || praiſes of him, who hath called you out of darkneſſe into his marvellous light:

|| Or, purchaſed people. † Or, vertues.

10 Which in time paſt were not a people, but are now the people of God: * which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

* Hoſ. 2. 23.

11 Dearly beloved, I beſeech you as ſtrangers and pilgrims, abſtain from fleſhly luſts, which warre againſt the ſoul.

12 Having your converſation honeſt among the Gentiles, that || whereas they ſpeak againſt you as evil doers, they may by your good works which they ſhall behold, glorifie God in the day of viſitation.

|| Or, whereon.

13 Submit your ſelves to every ordinance of man for the Lords ſake, whether it be to the king, as ſupreme,

14 Or unto governours, as unto them that are ſent by him for the puniſhment of evil doers, and for the praiſe of them that do well.

15 For ſo is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to ſilence the ignorance of fooliſh men.

16 As free, and not † uſing your liberty for a cloak of maliciouſneſſe, but as the ſervants of God.

† Gr. having.

17 || Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.

|| Or, eſteem.

18 Servants, be ſubject to your maſters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but alſo to the froward.

19 For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conſcience toward God endure grief, ſuffering wrongfully.

20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffetted for your faults, ye ſhall take it patiently? but if when ye do well, and ſuffer for it, ye take it patiently: this is || acceptable with God.

|| Or, thanke.

21 For even hereunto were ye called: becauſe Chriſt alſo ſuffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye ſhould follow his ſteps.

Some reade, for you.

22 Who did no ſinne, neither was guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he ſuffered, he threatned not: but committed himſelf to him that judgeth righteouſly.

|| Or, committed his cauſe.

24 Who his own ſelf bare our ſinnes in his own body || on the tree, that we being dead to ſinne, ſhould live unto righteouſneſſe, by whoſe ſtripes ye were healed.

|| Or, to.

25 For ye were as ſheep going aſtray, but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Biſhop of your ſouls.

CHAP. III.

1 *He teacheth the duty of wives and husbands to each other, 8 exhorting all men to unite and love, 14 and to ſuffer perſecution. 19 He declareth alſo the benefits of Chriſt toward the old world.*

LIkewiſe ye wives, be in ſubjection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the word, they alſo may without the word be wonne by the converſation of the wives:

2 While they behold your chaſt converſation coupled with fear.

3 Whoſe adorning, let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparell:

4 But let it be the hidden man of the heart in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament

of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands.

6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord, whose † daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

† Gr. children.

7 Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindred.

8 Finally, be ye all of one minde, having compassion one of another, ‖ love as brethren, be pitifull, be courteous:

‖ Or, loving to the brethren.

9 Not rendring evil for evil, or railing for railing: but contrariwise blessing, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.

10 For * he that will love life, and see good dayes, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile.

* Psal. 34. 12, &c.

11 Let him eschew evil and do good, let him seek peace, and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, & his eares are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is † against them that do evil.

† Gr. upon.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good?

14 But and if ye suffer for righteousnesse sake, happy are ye, and be not * afraid of their terrour, neither be troubled:

* Isa. 8. 12, 13.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and be ready alwayes to give an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meeknesse and ‖ fear:

‖ Or, reverence.

16 Having a good conscience, that whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil doers, they may be ashamed that falsly accuse your good conversation in Christ.

17 For it is better, if the will of God be so, that ye suffer for well doing, then for evil doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sinnes, the just for the unjust: (that he might bring us to God) being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:

19 By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison;

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the dayes of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is eight souls, were saved by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, even baptisme, doth also now save us, (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience towards God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ:

22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, angels, and authorities, and powers being made subject unto him.

CHAP. IIII.

He exhorteth them to cease from sinne by the example of Christ, and the consideration of the generall end that now approcheth: 12 and comforteth them against persecution.

FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm your selves likewise with the same minde: for he that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne:

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousnesse, lusts, excesse of wine, revellings, banquettings, and abominable idolatries:

4 Wherein they think it strange that you run not with them to the same excesse of riot, speaking evil of you:

5 Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quick and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober and watch unto prayer.

8 And above all things have fervent charitie among your selves: for charitie ‖ shall cover the multitude of sinnes.

‖ Or, will.

9 Use hospitalitie one to another without grudging.

10 As every man hath received the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles of God: if any man minister, let him do it as of the abilitie which God giveth, that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery triall, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you.

13 But rejoyce in as much as ye are partakers of Christs sufferings; that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

14 If ye be reproched for the name of Christ, happy are ye; for the spirit of glory, and of God resteth upon you: on their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an evil doer, or as a busie-body in other mens matters.

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this behalf.

17 For the time is come that judgement must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin at us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore, let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing as unto a faithfull Creatour.

CHAP. V.

1 He exhorteth the elders to feed their flocks, 5 the younger to obey, 8 and all to be sober, watchfull, and constant in the faith: 9 to resist the cruell adversary the devil.

THe elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witnesse of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed.

2 Feed the flock of God ‖ which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready minde.

‖ Or, as much as in you is.

3 Neither as ‖ being lords over Gods heritage: but being ensamples to the flock.

‖ Or, overruling.

4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appeare, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise ye younger, submit your selves unto the

the elder: yea, all of you be subject one to another, and be clothed with humilitie: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

6 Humble your selves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:

7 Casting all your care upon him, for he careth for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant: because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion walketh about seeking whom he may devoure.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called us into his eternall glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

11 To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 By Silvanus a faithfull brother unto you, (as I suppose) I have written briefly, exhorting, and testifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The church that is at Babylon elected together with you, salluteth you, and so doth Marcus my sonne.

14 Greet ye one another with a kisse of charity: Peace be with you all that are in Christ Jesus. Amen.

The second epistle generall of PETER.

CHAP. I.

1 Confirming them in hope of the increase of Gods graces, 5 he exhorteth them by faith and good works, to make their calling sure: 12 whereof he is carefull to remember them knowing that his death is at hand: 16 and warneth them to be constant in the faith of Christ, who is the true Sonne of God, by the eye-witnesse of the apostles beholding his majesty, and by the testimony of the Father and the prophets.

SImon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousnesse of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godlinesse, through the knowledge of him that hath called us ‖ to glory and vertue;

‖ Or, by.

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises; that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, adde to your faith, vertue; and to vertue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godlinesse;

7 And to godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse; and to brotherly kindnesse, charitie.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren, nor unfruitfull in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blinde, and cannot see farre off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sinnes.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall:

11 For so an entrance shall be ministred unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdome of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you up, by putting you in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as * our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed me.

* John 21.18

15 Moreover, I will endeavour that you may be able after my decease, to have these things alwayes in remembrance.

16 For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majestie.

17 For he received from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Sonne in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We have also a more sure word of prophesie, whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, untill the day dawn, and the day-starre arise in your hearts:

20 Knowing this first, that no prophesie of the scripture is of any private interpretation.

21 For the prophesie came not ‖ in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost.

‖ Or, at any time.

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, shewing the impiety and punishment both of them and their followers: 7 from which the godly shall be delivered, as Lot was out of Sodom: 10 and more fully describeth the manners of those profane and blasphemous seducers, whereby they may be the better known, and avoided.

BUt there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

2 And many shall follow their ‖ pernicious wayes, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

‖ Or, lasci-vious wayes, as some copies reade.

3 And through covetousnesse shall they with fained words make merchandise of you; whose judgement now of a long time lingreth not, and their damnation slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them

suffer

902 into chains of darknesse, to be reserved unto judgement:

5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousnesse, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly:

6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorra into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly:

7 And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawfull deeds)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleannesse, and despise ‖ government, * presumptuous are they, self-willed, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.

‖ Or, dominion.
* Jude 8.

11 Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation ‖ against them before the Lord.

‖ Some reade, against themselves.

12 But these, as naturall brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption,

13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousnesse, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day-time: spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings, while they feast with you;

14 Having eyes full of † adultery and that cannot cease from sinne, beguiling unstable souls, an heart they have exercised with covetous practises: cursed children.

† Gr. an adulteresse.

15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the sonne of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousnesse:

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumbe asse speaking with mans voice, forbad the madnesse of the prophet.

17 These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darknesse is reserved for ever.

18 For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonnesse, those that were ‖ clean escaped from them who live in error.

‖ Or, for a little, or a while, as some reade.

19 While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again intangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them then the beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousnesse, then after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again, and the sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

He affirmeth them of the certainty of Christs coming to judgement, against those scorners who dispute against it: 8 warning the godly for the long patience of God, to hasten their repentance. 10 He describeth also the manner how the world shall be destroyed: 11 exhorting them from the expectation thereof, to all holinesse of life: 15 and again, to think the patience of God to tend to their salvation, as Paul wrote to them in his epistles.

THis second epistle (beloved) I now write unto you, in both which I stirre up your pure mindes by way of remembrance:

2 That ye may be mindfull of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, & the earth ‖ standing out of the water, and in the water.

‖ Gr. consisting.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement, and perdition of ungodly men.

8 But (beloved) be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeares, and a thousand yeares as one day.

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise (as some men count slackness) but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in the which the heavens shall passe away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godlinesse,

12 Looking for, and ‖ hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?

‖ Or, hasting the coming.

13 Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousnesse.

14 Wherefore (beloved) seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.

15 And account that the long-suffering of our Lord is salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdome given unto him, hath written unto you.

16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also being led away with the errour of the wicked, fall from your own stedfastnesse.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: to him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.

THE

The first epistle generall of JOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 He describeth the person of Christ, by whom we have eternall life by a communion with God: 5 to which we must adjoyn holinesse of life, to testifie the truth of that our communion and profession of faith, as also to assure us of the forgivenesse of our sinnes by Christs death.

THat which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life:

2 (For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witnesse, and shew unto you that eternall life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us)

3 That which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us; and truely our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Sonne Jesus Christ.

4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darknesse at all.

6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darknesse, we lie, and do not the truth:

7 But if we walk in the light as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the bloud of Jesus Christ his Sonne cleanseth us from all sinne.

8 If we say that we have no sinne, we deceive our selves, and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confesse our sinnes, he is faithfull, and just to forgive us our sinnes, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousnesse.

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAP. II.

1 He comforteth them against the sinnes of infirmitie, 3 Rightly to know God, is to keep his commandments, 9 to love our brethren, 15 and not to love the world. 18 We must beware of seducers: 20 from whose deceits the godly are safe preserved by perseverance in faith and holinesse of life.

MY little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sinne not. And if any man sinne, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous:

2 And he is the propitiation for our sinnes: and not for ours onely, but also for the sinnes of the whole world.

3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandment unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in you: because the darknesse is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darknesse even untill now.

10 He that loveth his brother, abideth in the light, & there is none †occasion of stumbling in him.

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darknesse, and walketh in darknesse, and knoweth not whither he goeth, because that darknesse hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write unto you, little children, because your sinnes are forgiven you for his names sake.

13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I write unto you, young men, because ye have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.

14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning. I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away and the lust thereof: but he that doth the will of God, abideth for ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time, and as ye have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists, whereby we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from us, but they were not of us: for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of us.

20 But ye have an unction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I have not written unto you, because ye know not the truth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar but he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ? he is Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Sonne.

23 Whosoever denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father: but he that acknowledgeth the Sonne, hath the Father also.

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning: if that which ye have heard from the beginning, shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Sonne, & in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternall life.

26 These things have I written unto you concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye have received of him, abideth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you: But, as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, & is no lie, and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in ‖ him.

† Gr. scandal.

‖ Or, in

904

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appeare, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

29 If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one that doth righteousnesse, is born of him.

CHAP. III.

1 He declareth the singular love of God towards us, in making us his sonnes: 3 who therefore ought obediently to keep his commandments. 11 as also brotherly to love one another.

BEhold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sonnes of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

2 Beloved, now are we the sonnes of God, and it doth not yet appeare what we shall be: but we know, that when he shall appeare, we shall be like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sinne, transgresseth also the law: for sinne is the transgression of the law.

5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne.

6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doth righteousnesse, is righteous, even as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sinne, is of the devil: for the devil sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose the Sonne of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sinne: for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sinne, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

|| Or, commandment.

11 For this is the ||message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

12 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: and wherefore slew he him? because his own works were evil, and his brothers righteous.

13 Marvell not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a murderer, and ye know that no murderer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

17 But whoso hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of compassion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

18 My little children, let us not love in word neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.

19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall † assure our hearts before him.

† Gr. persuade.

20 For if our heart condemne us, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemne us not, then have we confidence towards God.

22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is his commandment, that we should beleeve on the name of his Sonne Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

24 And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He warneth them not to beleeve all teachers who boast of the Spirit, but to try them by the rules of the catholick faith: 7 and by many reasons exhorteth to brotherly love.

BEloved, beleeve not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come, and even now already is it in the world.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, heareth us; he that is not of God, heareth not us: hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of errour.

7 Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth, is born of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God; for God is love.

9 In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his onely begotten Sonne into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Sonne to be the propitiation for our sinnes.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

12 No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us.

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have seen and do testifie, that the Father sent the Sonne to be the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoever shall confesse that Jesus is the Sonne of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we have known and beleeved the love that God hath to us. God is love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is † our love made perfect, that we may have boldnesse in the day of judgement: because as he is, so are we in this world.

† Gr. love with us.

18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: he that feareth, is not made perfect in love.

19 We love him: because he first loved us.

20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother

ther whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?
21 And this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

CHAP. V.

He that loveth God, loveth his children, and keepeth his commandments: 3 which to the faithfull are light, and not grievous. 9 Jesus is the Sonne of God, able to save us, 14 and to heare our prayers, which we make for our selves, and for others.

WHosoever beleeveth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of God: and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him.
2 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep his commandments.
3 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments, and his commandments are not grievous.
4 For whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world, and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.
5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that beleeveth that Jesus is the Sonne of God?
6 This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ, not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witnesse, because the Spirit is truth.
7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.
8 And there are three that bear witnesse in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one.
9 If we receive the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which he hath testified of his Sonne.
10 He that beleeveth on the Sonne of God, hath the witnesse in himself: he that beleeveth not God, hath made him a liar, because he beleeveth not the record that God gave of his Sonne.
11 And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternall life: and this life is in his Sonne.
12 He that hath the Sonne, hath life; and he that hath not the Sonne of God, hath not life.
13 These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Sonne of God, that ye may know that ye have eternall life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Sonne of God.
14 And this is the confidence that we have || in him, that if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us.
15 And if we know that he heare us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.
16 If any man see his brother sinne a sinne which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sinne not unto death. There is a sinne unto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.
17 All unrighteousnesse is sinne, and there is a sinne not unto death.
18 We know that whosoever is born of God, sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.
19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickednesse.
20 And we know that the Sonne of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, even in his Sonne Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternall life.
21 Little children, keep your selves from idols. Amen.

|| *Or*, concerning him.

The second epistle of JOHN.

He exhorteth a certain honourable matrone with her children, to persevere in Christian love and belief, 8 lest they lose the reward of their former profession: 10 and to have nothing to do with those seducers that bring not the true doctrine of Christ Jesus.

THE elder unto the elect lady, and her children, whom I love in the truth: and not I onely, but also all they that have known the truth:
2 For the truths sake which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever:
3 Grace be with you, mercy, and peace from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ the Sonne of the Father, in truth and love.
4 I rejoyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.
5 And now I beseech thee lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.
6 And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.
7 For many deceivers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.
8 Look to your selves, that we lose not those things which we have || wrought, but that we receive a full reward.
9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.
10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed.
11 For he that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds.
12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink, but I trust to come unto you, and speak † face to face, that our joy may be full.
13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

|| *Or*, gained. *Some copies read*, which ye have gained, but that ye receive, &c.

† *Or*, mouth to mouth.

The

The third epistle of JOHN.

He commendeth Gaius for his piety, 5 and hospitality 7 to true preachers; 9 complaining of the unkinde dealing of ambitious Diotrephes on the contrary side, 11 whose evil example is not to be followed: 12 and giveth speciall testimony to the good report of Demetrius.

THe elder unto the welbeloved Gaius, whom I love ‖ in the truth:

‖ Or, truely.

2 Beloved, I ‖ wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

‖ Or, pray.

3 For I rejoyced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

4 I have no greater joy then to heare that my children walk in truth.

5 Beloved, thou dost faithfully whatsoever thou dost to the brethren, and to strangers:

6 Which have born witnesse of thy charitie before the church: whom if thou bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well:

7 Because that for his names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church, but Diotrephes who loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, & forbiddeth them that would, & casteth them out of the church.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doth good, is of God: but he that doth evil, hath not seen God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it self: yea, and we also bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee.

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak † face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

† Gr. mouth to mouth.

The generall epistle of JUDE.

He exhorteth them to be constant in the profession of the faith. 14 False teachers are crept in to seduce them: for whose damnable doctrine and manners, horrible punishment is prepared: 20 whereas the godly by the assistance of the holy Spirit, and prayers to God, may persevere, and grow in grace, and keep themselves, and recover others out of the snares of those deceivers.

IUde the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called:

2 Mercy unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needfull for me to write unto you, and exhort you that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousnesse, and denying the onely Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not.

6 And the angels which kept not their ‖ first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darknesse, unto the judgement of the great day.

‖ Or, principality.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrha, and the cities about them, in like manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going after † strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternall fire.

† Gr. other.

8 Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, * The Lord rebuke thee.

* Zech. 3.2.

10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

11 Wo unto them, for they have gone in the way of Cain, & ran greedily after the errour of Balaam for reward, & perished in the gainsaying of Core.

12 These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of windes; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots;

13 Raging waves of the sea, foming out their own shame; wandring starres, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,

15 To execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts, and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having mens persons in admiration because of advantage.

17 But

17 But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ:
18 How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.
19 These be they who separate themselves, sensuall, having not the Spirit.
20 But ye beloved, building up your selves on your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost,
21 Keep your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternall life.
22 And of some have compassion, making a difference:
23 And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire: hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.
24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,
25 To the onely wise God our Saviour be glory and majestie, dominion and power, now and ever. Amen.

The Revelation of S. JOHN the Divine.

CHAP. I.

4 John writeth his revelation to the seven churches of Asia, signified by the seven golden candlesticks. 7 The coming of Christ. 14 His glorious power and majesty.

THe Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to passe; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John:
2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things that he saw.
3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that heare the words of this prophesie, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.
4 John to the seven churches in Asia, Grace be unto you, and peace, from him * which is, and which was, and which is to come, and from the seven spirits which are before his throne:
5 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithfull witnesse, and the * first-begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth: Unto him that loved us, * and washed us from our sinnes in his own bloud,
6 And hath * made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.
7 * Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him: even so, Amen.
8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.
9 I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.
10 I was in the spirit on the Lords day, and heard behinde me a great voice as of a trumpet,
11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and what thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches which are in Asia; unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.
12 And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks.
13 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like unto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps with a golden girdle.
14 His head, and his hairs were white like wooll as white as snow, and his eyes were as a flame of fire,
15 And his feet like unto fine brasse, as if they burned in a furnace: and his voice as the sound of many waters.
16 And he had in his right hand seven starres: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and his countenance was as the sunne shineth in his strength.
17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead: and he laid his right hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not, * I am the first and the last.
18 I am he that liveth, and was dead: and behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.
19 Write the things which thou hast seen, and the things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter,
20 The mystery of the seven starres which thou sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven starres are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seven churches.

* Exod. 3. 14
* 1. Cor. 15. 20. Coloss. 1. 18.
* Heb. 9. 14.
* 1. Pet. 2. 5.
* Matth. 24. 30.
* Isa. 41. 4. and 44. 6.

CHAP. II.

What is commanded to be written to the angels, that is, the ministers of the churches of 1 Ephesus, 8 Smyrna, 12 Pergamos, 18 Thyatira: and what is commended, or found wanting in them.

UNto the angel of the church of Ephesus write, These things saith he that holdeth the seven starres in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks:
2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil, and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars:
3 And hast born, and hast patience, and for my names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.
4 Nevertheless, I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love.
5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.
6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.
7 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches. To him that overcometh

908

overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

8 And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write, These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive,

9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and ye shall have tribulation ten dayes: be thou faithfull unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches, He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write, These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges,

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satans seat is, and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those dayes wherein Antipas was my faithfull martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of * Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

* Num. 25.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brasse,

19 I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and the last to be more then the first.

20 Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman * Jezebel, which calleth her self a prophetesse, to teach, and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

* 1. Kings 16. 31.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that * I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

* Jer. 11. 20. and 17. 10.

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye have already, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations.

27 (* And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers) even as I received of my Father.

* Psal. 2. 9.

28 And I will give him the morning-starre.

29 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. III.

2 The angel of the church of Sardis is reproved, 3 exhorted to repent, and threatned if he do not repent. 8 The angel of the church of Philadelphia, 10 is approved for his diligence and patience. 15 The angel of Laodicea rebuked, for being neither hot nor cold, 19 and admonished to be more zealous. 20 Christ standeth at the doore, and knocketh.

AND unto the angel of the church in Sardis write, These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven starres, I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchfull, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. * If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what houre I will come upon thee.

* 1. Thess. 5. 2. 2. Pet. 3. 10.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments, and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot out his name out of the * book of life, but I will confesse his name before my Father, and before his angels.

* Phil. 4. 3. Chap. 20. 12.

6 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write, These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth;

8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan (which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie) behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the houre of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

13 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church || of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithfull and true witnesse, the beginning of the creation of God,

|| Or, in Laodicea.

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold

cold nor hot: I would thou were cold or hot.
16 So then because thou art luke-warm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spew thee out of my mouth.
17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing: and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poore, and blinde, and naked.
18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakednesse do not appeare; and anoint thine eyes with eye-salve, that thou mayest see.
*Prov.3.11. Heb.12.5. 19 * As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore and repent.
20 Behold, I stand at the doore and knock: if any man heare my voice, and open the doore, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.
21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.
22 He that hath an eare, let him heare what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

CHAP. IIII.

2 John seeth the throne of God in heaven. 4 The foure and twenty elders. 6 The foure beasts full of eyes before & behinde. 10 The elders lay down their crowns, and worship him that sat on the throne.

After this I looked, and behold, a doore was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet talking with me, which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.
2 And immediately I was in the spirit: and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.
3 And he that sat, was to look upon like a jasper, and a sardine-stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.
4 And round about the throne were foure and twenty seats, and upon the seats I saw foure and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and they had on their heads crowns of gold.
5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thunderings, and voices: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven spirits of God.
6 And before the throne there was a sea of glasse like unto crystall: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were foure beasts full of eyes before and behinde.
7 And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.
8 And the foure beasts had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and † they rest not day and night, saying, * Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.
† Gr. they have no rest * Isa.6.3.
9 And when those beasts give glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,
10 The foure and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the throne, saying,
* Chap.5.12 11 * Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

CHAP. V.

1 The book sealed with seven seals: 9 which onely the Lambe that was slain is worthy to open. 12 Therefore the elders praise him, 9 and confesse that he redeemed them with his blood.

And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the throne, a book written within, and on the backside sealed with seven seals.
2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?
3 And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon.
4 And I wept much because no man was found worthy to open, and to reade the book, neither to look thereon.
5 And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep not: behold, * the lion of the tribe of Juda, the roote of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and to loose the seven seals thereof.
* Gen.49.9.
6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the throne, and of the foure beasts, and in the midst of the elders stood a Lambe as it had been slain, having seven hornes, and seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.
7 And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.
8 And when he had taken the book, the foure beasts, and foure and twenty elders fell down before the Lambe, having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of ‖ odours, which are the prayers of saints.
‖ Or, incense
9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation:
10 * And hast made us unto our God kings and priests, and we shall reigne on the earth.
* 1.Pet.2.9.
11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the beasts, and the elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,
12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lambe that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.
13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, honour, glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lambe for ever and ever.
14 And the foure beasts said, Amen. And the foure and twenty elders fell down and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

CHAP. VI.

1 The opening of the seals in order, and what followed thereupon, containing a prophesie to the end of the world.

And I saw when the Lambe opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the foure beasts, saying, Come, and see.
2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat on him had a bow, and a crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

3 And

910

3 And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come, and see.
4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.
5 And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come, and see. And I beheld, and lo, a black horse, and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand.
6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the foure beasts say, ‖ A measure of wheat for a peny, and three measures of barley for a peny, and see thou hurt not the oyl and the wine.
7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come, and see.
8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was Death, and hell followed with him: and power was given ‖ unto them, over the fourth part of the earth to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.
9 And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held.
10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?
11 And white robes were given unto every one of them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellowservants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.
12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sunne became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood,
13 And the starres of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig-tree casteth her ‖ untimely figs when she is shaken of a mighty winde.
14 * And the heaven departed as a scrowl when it is rolled together, and every mountain and island were moved out of their places:
15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every freeman, hid themselves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains,
16 * And said to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe:
17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?

‖ The word *chœnix* signifieth a measure containing one wine quart, and the twelfth part of a quart.
‖ *Or*, to him.
‖ *Or*, green figs.
* Isa. 34.4.
* Luke 23.30

CHAP. VII.

3 An angel sealeth the servants of God in their foreheads. 4 The number of them that were sealed: of the tribes of Israel a certain number, 9 of all other nations an innumerable multitude, which stand before the throne, clad in white robes, and palms in their hands. 14 Their robes were washed in the blood of the Lambe.

AND after these things, I saw foure angels standing on the foure corners of the earth, holding the foure windes of the earth, that the winde should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.
2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the foure angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea,
3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.
4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed, an hundred and fourty and foure thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.
5 Of the tribe of Juda were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.
6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand.
7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.
8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.
9 After this, I beheld, and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands:
10 And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lambe.
11 And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders, and the foure beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,
12 Saying, Amen: Blessing, and glory, and wisdome, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.
13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arayed in white robes? and whence came they?
14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lambe.
15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall * dwell among them.
16 * They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sunne light on them, nor any heat.
17 For the Lambe which is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: * and God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes.

* Chap. 21.3
* Isa. 49.10.
* Isa. 25.8. Chap. 21.4.

CHAP. VIII.

1 At the opening of the seventh seal, 2 seven angels had seven trumpets given them. 6 Foure of them sound their trumpets, and great plagues follow. 3 Another angel putteth incense to the prayers of the saints on the golden altar.

AND when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an houre.
2 And I saw the seven angels which stood before God, and to them were given seven trumpets.
3 And another angel came and stood at the altar,

altar, having a golden censer, and there was given unto him much incense, that he should ‖offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar, which was before the throne.

‖ Or, adde it to the prayers.

4 And the smoke of the incense which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God, out of the angels hand.

5 And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thundrings, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

6 And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

7 The first angel sounded, and there followed hail, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grasse was burnt up.

8 And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood:

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great starre from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters:

11 And the name of the starre is called Wormwood, and the third part of the waters became wormwood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sunne was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the starres, so as the third part of them was darkened: and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, to the inhabiters of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound.

CHAP. IX.

1 At the sounding of the fifth angel, a starre falleth from heaven, to whom is given the key of the bottomlesse pit. 2 He openeth the pit, and there come forth locusts like scorpions. 12 The first woe past. 13 The sixth trumpet soundeth. 14 Foure angels are let loose, that were bound.

AND the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a starre fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And he opened the bottomlesse pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace, and the sunne and the aire were darkened, by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth, and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power:

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree, but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five moneths: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those dayes shall men seek death, and shall not finde it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

7 And the shapes of the locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battell, and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions.

9 And they had breast-plates, as it were breast-plates of iron, and the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battell.

10 And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails, and their power was to hurt men five moneths.

11 And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name ‖ Apollyon.

‖ That is to say, a destroyer.

12 One woe is past, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the foure horns of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 Saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet, Loose the foure angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

15 And the foure angels were loosed, which were prepared ‖ for an houre, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeare, for to slay the third part of men.

‖ Or, at.

16 And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breast-plates of fire, and of jacinct, and brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions, and out of their mouthes issued fire, and smoke, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the brimstone, which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails, for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads, and with them they do hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, * and idols of gold and silver, and brasse, and stone, and of wood: which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

* Psal. 115. 4. and 135. 15.

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

CHAP. X.

A mighty strong angel appeareth with a book open in his hand. 6 He sweareth by him that liveth for ever, that there shall be no more time. 9 John is commanded to take and eat the book.

AND I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow was upon his head, and his face was as it were the sunne, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,

3 And cried with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: and when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and write them not.

5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea, & upon the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven,

6 And sware by him that liveth for ever and

912

ever, who created heaven and the things that therein are, and the earth and the things that therein are, and the ſea and the things which are therein, that there ſhould be time no longer:

7 But in the dayes of the voice of the ſeventh angel, when he ſhall begin to ſound, the miſterie of God ſhould be finiſhed, as he hath declared to his ſervants the prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heaven ſpake unto me again, and ſaid, Go, and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel which ſtandeth upon the ſea, and upon the earth.

9 And I went unto the angel, and ſaid unto him, Give me the little book. And he ſaid unto me, * Take it, and eat it up, and it ſhall make thy belly bitter, but it ſhall be in thy mouth ſweet as hony.

* Ezek. 2.8. and 3.3.

10 And I took the little book out of the angels hand, and eat it up, and it was in my mouth ſweet as hony: and aſſoon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he ſaid unto me, Thou muſt propheſie again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

CHAP. XI.

1 The two witneſſes propheſie: 6 they have power to ſhut heaven, that it rain not. 7 The beaſt ſhall fight againſt them, and kill them. 8 They lie unburied, 11 and after three dayes and an half riſe again. 14 The ſecond woe is paſt. 15 The ſeventh trumpet ſoundeth.

AND there was given me a reed like unto a rod, and the angel ſtood, ſaying, Riſe, and meaſure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worſhip therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple † leave out, and meaſure it not: for it is given unto the Gentiles, and the holy city ſhall they tread under foot fourty and two moneths.

† Gr. caſt out.

3 And ‖ I will give power unto my two witneſſes, and they ſhall propheſie a thouſand two hundred and threeſcore dayes clothed in ſackcloth.

‖ Or, I will give unto my two witneſſes that they may propheſie.

4 Theſe are the * two olive-trees, and the two candleſticks ſtanding before the God of the earth.

* Zech 4.3, 11, 14.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he muſt in this manner be killed.

6 Theſe have power to ſhut heaven, that it rain not in the dayes of their propheſie: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to ſmite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they ſhall have finiſhed their teſtimony, the beaſt that aſcendeth out of the bottomleſſe pit, ſhall make warre againſt them, and ſhall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies ſhall lie in the ſtreet of the great city, which ſpiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where alſo our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations, ſhall ſee their dead bodies three dayes and an half, and ſhall not ſuffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

10 And they that dwell upon the earth ſhall rejoyce over them, and make merry, and ſhall ſend gifts one to another, becauſe theſe two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an half, the Spirit of life from God entred into them: and they ſtood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them which ſaw them.

12 And they heard a great voice from heaven, ſaying unto them, Come up hither. And they aſcended up to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the ſame houre was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were ſlain † of men ſeven thouſand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

† Gr. names of men.

14 The ſecond woe is paſt, and behold, the third woe cometh quickly.

15 And the ſeventh angel ſounded, and there were great voices in heaven, ſaying, The kingdomes of this world are become the kingdomes of our Lord, and of his Chriſt, and he ſhall reigne for ever and ever.

16 And the foure and twenty elders which ſat before God on their ſeats, fell upon their faces, and worſhipped God,

17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and waſt, and art to come; becauſe thou haſt taken to thee thy great power, and haſt reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they ſhould be judged, and that thou ſhouldeſt give reward unto thy ſervants the prophets, and to the ſaints, and them that fear thy name, ſmall and great, and ſhouldeſt deſtroy them which ‖ deſtroy the earth.

‖ Or, corrupt.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was ſeen in his temple the ark of his teſtament, and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

CHAP. XII.

1 A woman clothed with the ſunne travaileth. 4 The great red dragon ſtandeth before her, ready to devoure her childe: 6 when ſhe was delivered ſhe fleeth into the wilderneſſe. 7 Michael and his angels fight with the dragon, and prevail. 13 The dragon being caſt down into the earth, perſecuteth the woman.

AND there appeared a great ‖ wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the ſunne, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve ſtarres:

‖ Or, ſigne.

2 And ſhe being with childe, cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another ‖ wonder in heaven, and behold, a great red dragon, having ſeven heads, and ten horns, and ſeven crowns upon his heads.

‖ Or, ſigne.

4 And his tail drew the third part of the ſtarres of heaven, and did caſt them to the earth: and the dragon ſtood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devoure her childe aſſoon as it was born.

5 And ſhe brought forth a man-childe, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her childe was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wilderneſſe, where ſhe hath a place prepared of God, that they ſhould feed her there a thouſand two hundred and threeſcore dayes.

7 And there was warre in heaven, Michael and his angels fought againſt the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels:

8 And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God, day and night.

11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lambe, and by the word of their testimony, and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12 Therefore rejoyce, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them; wo to the inhabiters of the earth, and of the sea: for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man-childe.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might flie into the wilderness, into her place; where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood, after the woman: that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make warre with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

1 A beast riseth out of the sea with seven heads and ten horns, to whom the dragon giveth his power. 11 Another beast cometh up out of the earth: 14 causeth an image to be made of the former beast, 15 and that men should worship it, 16 and receive his mark.

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the ‖ name of blasphemy.

‖ *Or*, names.

2 And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads, as it were † wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast.

† *Gr.* slain.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make warre with him?

5 And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies; and power was given unto him ‖ to continue fourty and two moneths.

‖ *Or*, to make warre.

6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemie against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make warre with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

913

8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lambe slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man have an eare, let him heare.

10 He that leadeth into captivity, shall go into captivity: * he that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

*Matt. 26. 52

11 And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lambe, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth, in the sight of men,

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

15 And he had power to give † life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

† *Gr.* breath

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, † to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads.

† *Gr.* to give.

17 And that no man might buy or sell save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisdome. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Lambe standing on mount Sion with his company: 6 an angel preacheth the gospel. 8 The fall of Babylon. 15 The harvest of the world, and putting in of the sickle. 20 The vintage and wine-presse of the wrath of God.

AND I looked, and lo, a lambe stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred fourty and foure thousand, having his Fathers name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the foure beasts, and the elders, and no man could learn that song, but the hundred and fourty and foure thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women: for they are virgins: these are they which follow the Lambe whithersoever he goeth: these † were redeemed from among men, being the first-fruits unto God, and to the Lambe.

† *Gr.* were bought.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another angel flie in the midst of

914 heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, for the houre of his judgement is come: * and worship him that made heaven and earth, and the sea and the fountains of waters.

*Psal.146. 5,6. Acts 14. 15.

8 And there followed another angel, saying, * Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

*Isa.21.9. Jer.51.8. Chap. 18.2.

9 And the third angel followed them saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture, into the cup of his indignation, and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lambe:

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever. And they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

13 And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, ‖ from henceforth, yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their works do follow them.

‖ Or, from henceforth saith the Spirit, yea.

14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat, like unto the Sonne of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

15 And another angel came out of the temple crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, * Thrust in thy sickle and reap, for the time is come for thee to reap, for the harvest of the earth is ‖ ripe.

*Joel 3.13.

‖ Or, dried.

16 And he that sat on the cloud, thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire, and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great wine-presse of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine-presse was troden without the city, and blood came out of the wine-presse, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

1 The seven angels with the seven last plagues. 3 The song of them that overcome the beast. 7 The seven vials full of the wrath of God.

AND I saw another signe in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels having the seven last plagues, for in them is filled up the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glasse, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glasse, having the harps of God.

3 And they sing * the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty, * just and true are thy wayes, thou King of saints.

*Exod.15.1.

4 * Who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy name? for thou onely art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy judgements are made manifest.

*Psal.145. 17. * Jer.10 7.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was opened.

6 And the seven angels came out of the temple, having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beasts gave unto the seven angels, seven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 The angels poure out of their vials full of wrath. 6 The plagues that follow thereupon. 15 Christ cometh as a thief. Blessed are they that watch.

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple, saying to the seven angels, Go your wayes and poure out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth, and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea.

4 And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and wast, and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus:

6 For they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink, for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgements.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sunne, and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

9 And men were ‖ scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not, to give him glory.

‖ Or, burned.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast, and his kingdome was full of darkenesse, and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

11 And blasphemed the God of heaven because of their pains and their sores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And

12 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battell of that great day of God Almighty.

* Matt. 24. 43. 15 * Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked and they see his shame.

16 And he gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the aire, and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake and so great.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great * Jer. 25. 15. Babylon came in remembrance before God, * to give unto her the cup of the wine of the fierceness of his wrath.

20 And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent: and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail; for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

3, 4 A woman arayed in purple and scarlet, with a golden cup in her hand, sitteth upon the beast, 5 which is great Babylon, the mother of all abominations. 9 The interpretation of the seven heads, 12 and the ten horns. 8 The punishment of the whore. 14 The victory of the Lambe.

AND there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither, I will shew unto thee the judgement of the great whore, that sitteth upon many waters:

2 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabiters of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet-colour'd beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads, and ten horns.

† Gr. gilded. 4 And the woman was arayed in purple and scarlet colour, and † decked with gold and precious stone and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication.

5 And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF ‖ HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

‖ Or, fornications. 6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondred with great admiration.

7 And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell thee the mysterie of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomlesse pit, and go into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the minde which hath wisdome. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seven kings, five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come: and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdome as yet: but receive power as kings one houre with the beast.

13 These have one minde, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

14 These shall make warre with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall overcome them: * for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithfull. * 1. Tim. 6. 15. Chap. 19. 16.

15 And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten horns which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and give their kingdome unto the beast, untill the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great citie, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

2 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to depart out of her. 9 The kings of the earth, 11 with the merchants and mariners, lament over her. 20 The saints rejoyce for the judgements of God upon her.

AND after these things, I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power, and the earth was lightned with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, * Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hatefull bird. * Chap. 14. 8.

3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the † abundance of her delicacies. † Or, power.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, and that ye receive not of her plagues:

916

5 For her sinnes have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double, according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified her self, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a * queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

* Isa. 47.8.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burnt with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication, and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning:

10 Standing afarre off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty citie: for in one houre is thy judgement come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no man buyeth her merchandise any more:

12 The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all ‖ thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of braſſe, and iron, and marble,

‖ Or, sweet.

13 And cinamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oyl, and fine floure, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and ‖ slaves, and souls of men.

‖ Or, bodies.

14 And the fruits that thy soul lusted after, are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more at all.

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand afarre off, for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls:

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to nought. And every shipmaster, and all the company in ships, and sailers, and as many as trade by sea, stood afarre off,

18 And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What citie is like unto this great citie?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costlinesse, for in one houre is she made desolate.

20 Rejoyce over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets, for God hath avenged you on her.

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great citie Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters shall be heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee: and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee, for thy merchants were the great men of the earth: for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

24 And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 God is praised in heaven for judging the great whore, and avenging the blood of his saints. 7 The marriage of the Lambe. 10 The angel will not be worshipped. 17 The fowls called to the great slaughter.

AND after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia, salvation, and glory, and honour, and power unto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his judgements, for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

3 And again they said, Alleluia: and her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

4 And the foure and twenty elders, and the foure beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thundrings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let us be glad and rejoyce, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her self ready.

8 And to her was granted, that she should be arayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousnesse of saints.

9 And he saith unto me, Write, * Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lambe. And he said unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

* Matt. 22.2.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him: and he said unto me, * See thou do it not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren, that have the testimonie of Jesus, worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophesie.

* Chap. 22.9

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat upon him was called faithfull and true, and in righteousnesse he doth judge and make warre.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns, and he had a name written that no man knew but he himself.

13 * And he was clothed with a vesture dipt in blood, and his name is called, The word of God.

* Isa. 63.2.

14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine-presse of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

16 And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

* Chap. 17. 14.

17 And I saw an angel standing in the sunne, and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that flie in the midst of heaven, Come and gather your selves together unto the supper of the great God:

18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the

the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make warre against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

2 Satan bound for a thousand yeares. 6 The first resurrection: they blessed that have part therein. 7 Satan let loose again. 8 Gog and Magog. 10 The devil cast into the lake of fire and brimstone. 12 The last and generall resurrection.

AND I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chain in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand yeares,

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand yeares should be fulfilled: and after that, he must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them: and I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand yeares.

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again untill the thousand yeares were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeares.

7 And when the thousand yeares are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall go out to deceive the nations, which are in the foure quarters of the earth, * Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battell: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

*Ezek. 38. 2. and 39. 1.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved citie: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

10 And the devil that deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God: and the books were opened: and another * book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

*Chap. 3. 5.

13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it: and death and ‖ hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

‖ *Or*, grave.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A new heaven and a new earth. 10 The heavenly Jerusalem, with a full description thereof. 23 She needeth no sunne, the glory of God is her light. 24 The kings of the earth bring their riches unto her.

AND * I saw a new heaven, and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea.

* Isa. 65. 17. 2. Pet. 3. 13.

2 And I John saw the holy citie, new Jerusalem coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.

4 * And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.

* Chap. 7. 17.

5 And he that sat upon the throne, said, * Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithfull.

* 2. Cor. 5. 17.

6 And he said unto me, It is done: * I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. * I will give unto him that is athirst, of the fountain of the water of life freely.

* Chap. 1. 8. and 22. 13.
* Isa. 55. 1.

7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my sonne.

8 But the fearfull and unbeleeving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

9 And there came unto me one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And he carried me away in the Spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great citie, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,

11 Having the glory of God: and her light was like unto a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, cleare as crystall;

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the east three gates, on the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lambe.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reed to measure the citie, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lieth foure-square, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the citie with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs:

longs: the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and fourtie and foure cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper, and the citie was pure gold, like unto clear glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was jasper, the second saphir, the third a chalcedonie, the fourth an emerald,

20 The fifth sardonyx, the sixth sardius, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth a topaz, the tenth a chrysoprasus, the eleventh a jacinct, the twelfth an amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls, every severall gate was of one pearl, and the street of the citie was pure gold, as it were transparent glasse.

22 And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lambe, are the temple of it.

* Isa.60.19. 23 * And the city had no need of the sunne, neither of the moon to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lambe is the light thereof.

* Isa.60.3. 24 * And the nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

* Isa.60.11. 25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lambes book of life.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The river of the water of life. 2 The tree of life. 5 The light of the citie of God is himself. 9 The angel will not be worshipped. 18 Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor taken therefrom.

AND he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and of either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit every moneth: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lambe shall be in it, and his servants shall serve him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his name shall be in their foreheads.

5 * And there shall be no night there, and they need no candle, neither light of the sunne, for the Lord God giveth them light, and they shall reigne for ever and ever. * Chap.21.23.

6 And he said unto me, These sayings are faithfull and true. And the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly: Blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophesie of this book.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith he unto me, * See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. *Chap.19.10.

10 And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophesie of this book: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, * to give every man according as his work shall be. * Rom.2.6.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, * the beginning and the end, the first and the last. *Isa.41.4. and 44.6.

14 Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the citie.

15 For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus have sent mine angel, to testifie unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the off-spring of David, and the bright and morning starre.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. * And let him that is athirst, come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. * Isa.55.1.

18 For I testifie unto every man that heareth the words of the prophesie of this book, * If any man shall adde unto these things, God shall adde unto him the plagues that are written in this book: * Deut.4.2. Prov.30.6.

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophesie, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy citie, and from the things which are written in this book.

20 He which testifieth these things, saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, Come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

FINIS.